

# What the Bible Teaches

**Based on the book by the same name by R. A. Torrey**

This book is a modernization of R. A. Torrey's classic book on systematic theology *What the Bible Teaches*. It includes a cross-referencing scheme to correlate with the 17th edition.

There are several kinds of updates:

- (1) Torrey used the King James Version (KJV), which many modern readers (including the Reviser) find difficult to read due to the Shakespearean-era vocabulary and syntax and difficult to pronounce. In general Torrey's extensive KJV quotes have been replaced with New International Version (NIV) quotes.
- (2) Torrey's book is actually a somewhat more organized version of his class lecture notes. The numbering scheme varies among sections, which can get confusing. Variations in the scheme have been eliminated.
- (3) All Topics and Points have been assigned a reference number, with cross-references to Torrey's work.
- (4) When the book was written the dominant religion in the United States was Protestantism. Few English speakers knew anything about Mormonism, Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, Wicca, or other non-Christian religions. Material has been added discussing some religious concepts foreign to Christianity and non-religious philosophies that compete with Christianity such as Existentialism and macro-evolution.
- (5) The sequence of presentation has been reversed. Torrey basically presents scripture quotes followed by a "summary" "point". Modern readers are used to an introductory statement followed by supporting material. Even knowing that Torrey has the order reversed, modern readers still have a tendency to read his "point" sentence and then try to connect it with the *following* text rather than the preceding text.
- (6) A number of concepts are discussed that are common knowledge today but rarely considered in Torrey's time, e.g., the difference between intelligence and sentience.
- (7) Chapter numbers are in increments of ten except in a few cases. This was done to allow insertion of additional material or to subdivide lengthy chapters.
- (8) ***Even-numbered chapters and points are from Torrey's material and odd-numbered material has been added.***

## What the Bible Teaches About God

- 010 - God As Spirit
- 020 - The Unity of God
- 030 - The Eternity of God
- 035 - Some Philosophical Concepts of Divinity
- 040 - The Omnipresence of God
- 050 - The Personality of God
- 060 - The Omnipotence of God
- 070 - The Omniscience of God
- 080 - The Holiness of God
- 090 - The Love of God
- 100 - The Righteousness, or Justice, of God
- 110 - The Mercy, or Loving-Kindness, of God
- 120 - The Faithfulness of God

**CLICK ON A TITLE TO  
GO TO THAT SECTION**

**TO JUMP HERE CLICK ON  
*WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES*  
AT A CHAPTER BEGINNING**

## What the Bible Teaches About Jesus p. 92

- 130 - The Divinity of Jesus
- 130 - The Divinity of Jesus -- Part 2
- 140 - The Subordination of the Son to the Father
- 150 - The Human Nature of Jesus Christ

### The Character of Jesus

- 160 - The Character of Jesus - Holiness
- 162 - The Character of Jesus - Love
- 164 - The Character of Jesus - Compassion
- 166 - The Character of Jesus - His Prayer Life
- 168 - The Character of Jesus - Meekness and Humility

- 170 - The Death of Jesus Christ
- 174 - The Results of Christ's Death
- 180 - The Resurrection of Jesus
- 184 - The Resurrection of Jesus Part 2
- 190 - The Ascension or Exaltation of Jesus

### The Return of Jesus Christ

- 200 - The Fact, Importance and Manner of Jesus' Return
- 202 - The Purposes and Results of Jesus' Return
- 204 - The Effect of Jesus' Return on Nations and the Unsaved

- 205 - The Marriage of Jesus

## What the Bible Teaches About the Holy Spirit p. 260

- 210 - The Personhood of the Holy Spirit
- 220 - The Deity of the Holy Spirit
- 230 - The Holy Spirit Distinguished from the Father and the Son
- 240 - The Subordination of the Holy Spirit to the Father and the Son
- 250 - The Names of the Holy Spirit
- 260 - The Work of the Holy Spirit
- 270 - Baptism of the Holy Spirit
- 280 - The Work of the Holy Spirit in Prophets and Apostles
- 290 - The Work of the Holy Spirit in Jesus
- 295 - The Gifts of the Holy Spirit

## What the Bible Teaches About Man p. 324

- 300 - Man's Original Condition
- 310 - The Fall of Man
- 320 - The Standing Before God of Those Outside Jesus' Redemption
- 330 - The Destiny of Those Who Reject Redemption Through Jesus
- 340 - Justification
- 350 - The New Birth
- 360 - God's Adoption of Believers
- 370 - The Sanctification of Believers
- 380 - Repentance
- 390 - Faith - Part 1
- 394 - Faith - Part 2
- 400 - Love to God
- 410 - Love to Christ
- 420 - Love to Man

## Prayer

- 430 - Prayer - Who Can Pray So God Will Hear, To Whom Should We Pray
- 434 - Prayer - For Whom and When to Pray
- 436 - Prayer - What to Pray For
- 438 - Prayer - How to Pray
- 440 - Thanksgiving
- 450 - Worship
- 460 - The Believer's Assurance of Salvation
- 470 - The Destiny of Believers

## What the Bible Teaches About Angels p. 533

- 480 - God's Angels
- 490 - The Work of Angels

## What the Bible Teaches About Satan -- The Devil

500 - The Devil

510 - Satan - The Prince and King of Tyre

520 - The Abode and Work of Satan

530 - Our Duty Regarding the Devil

540 - The Devil's Final Destiny

# What the Bible Teaches

## Chapter 300

---

300.000.000      Torrey: p293

### MAN'S ORIGINAL CONDITION.

300.010.000      Torrey: p293, T:I

**Topic 10: Man is Created in the Image of God**

300.010.010      Torrey: p293, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: God created man in His own image, in His own likeness.**

**Genesis 1:26-27** [26] Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground." [27] So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.

**Genesis 9:6** Whoever sheds the blood of man, by man shall his blood be shed; for in the image of God has God made man.

QUESTION: To what do "image" and "likeness" refer?

ANSWER: Contrast **Hebrews 1:3** The Son is the radiance of God's glory and *the exact representation of his being, . . .*

An image is an inexact copy. It has some, but not all, of the original's characteristics and qualities.

**Ephesians 4:22-24** [22] You were taught ... [23] to be made new in the attitude of your minds; [24] and to put on the new self, *created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.*

**Colossians 3:9-10** [9] ... you have taken off your old self with its practices [10] and have put on the new self, which is being *renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.*

**Romans 8:29** For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the likeness of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers.

**2 Corinthians 3:18** And we, who with unveiled faces all reflect the Lord's glory, are being transformed into his likeness with ever-increasing glory, which comes from the Lord, who is the Spirit.

**Colossians 1:15** He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation.

Compare **1 Timothy 1:17** Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

The words "image" and "likeness" plainly do not refer to visible or bodily likeness, but to intellectual and moral likeness -- likeness "in knowledge", "righteousness" and "holiness of truth".

## == DISCUSSION ==

**Psalms 17:15** And I -- in righteousness I will see your face; when I awake, I will be satisfied with seeing your likeness.

The Hebrew word used here clearly means a *visible* form.

Compare **Numbers 12:8** With him *I speak face to face*, clearly and not in riddles; *he sees the form of the LORD*. Why then were you not afraid to speak against my servant Moses?"

OBJECTION: **Exodus 33:19** [19] And the LORD said, "I will cause all my goodness to pass in front of you, .... [20] But," he said, "*you cannot see my face, for no one may see me and live.*" (Some translations read "No one may see my face and live.")

Also, in **Genesis 2** although not expressly stated, it is fairly obvious that Adam, Eve, and God were talking face to face.

ANSWER: The "God" referred to must be the Angel of the Lord, i.e., Jesus before He became man.

The image and likeness would seem also to have some reference to the visible likeness. It is true God is essentially spirit and invisible.

**John 4:24** God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.

**Colossians 1:5** He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation.

But God has a form in which he manifests Himself to the eye.

**Isaiah 6:1** In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple.

**Acts 7:56** "Look," he said, "I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God."

**Philippians 2:6-7** [6] Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, [7] but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness.

See Thayer's Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament on the word translated "form" in this last passage.

Man seems to have been created not only in the intellectual and moral, but also the visible likeness

of God.

Compare **Genesis 5:1, 3** [1] This is the written account of Adam's line. When God created man, he made him in the likeness of God. [3] When Adam had lived 130 years, he had a son in his own likeness, in his own image; and he named him Seth.

It is perhaps impossible to say how much of this visible likeness was lost in the Fall, but in the regeneration man is not only recreated intellectually and morally in the likeness of God, **Ephesians 4:22-24**; **Colossians 3:9- 10**, but when the regeneration is complete in the outward, visible likeness as well.

Compare **Philippians 3:20-21** [20] ... the Lord Jesus Christ, [21] who, by the power that enables him to bring everything under his control, will transform *our lowly bodies* so that they will be *like his glorious body*.

From a comparison of the following two passages we see that "the form" of Christ was the form of God:

**John 17:5** And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began.

**Philippians 2:6** [6] Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, [7] but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness.

300.020.000 Torrey: p294, T:II

**Topic 20: The Original Intellectual and Moral Condition of Man.**

300.020.010 Torrey: p294, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Man was created with sufficient intellectual capacity to give names to all living creatures and to have dominion over them.**

**Genesis 2:19** Now the LORD God had formed out of the ground all the beasts of the field and all the birds of the air. He brought them to the man to see what he would name them; and whatever the man called each living creature, that was its name.

**Genesis 1:28** God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."

300.020.020 Torrey: p295, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Man was not created a sinner, but sin entered into the world through man, by his conscious and voluntary choice.**

**Genesis 3:1-6** [1] Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?'" [2] The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, [3] but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'" [4] "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman. [5] "For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." [6] When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye,

and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.

**Romans 5:12-14** [12] Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, because all sinned -- [13] for before the law was given, sin was in the world. But sin is not taken into account when there is no law. [14] Nevertheless, death reigned from the time of Adam to the time of Moses, even over those who did not sin by breaking a command, as did Adam, who was a pattern of the one to come.

**Ecclesiastes 7:29** This only have I found: God made mankind upright, but men have gone in search of many schemes.

300.030.000      Torrey: no

### Topic 30: The Purpose for the creation of Man and the Angels.

We can better understand Man's original nature if we understand the reason he was created. This can best be determined by inference.

300.030.010      Torrey: no

#### POINT 10: God created Man and the Angels for companionship.

Try to picture God's circumstances before He created Man and the Angels: three 'guys' 'hanging out'. Nothing else exists. Every once in awhile, one of them says "You know what I think?" And the other two say "Of course. I'm omniscient." Then they 'sit around' for awhile. Sooner or later, another one says "You know what I think?" ...

Pretty boring, huh?

God created Man and the Angels because He was bored and lonely. Like us, He wants companionship and love. Like us, He gets enjoyment and satisfaction from teaching His 'kids' and seeing them progress.

300.030.020      Torrey: no

#### POINT 20: The only way Man and the Angels could serve the purpose for which they were created was for God to create them less than perfect.

Because God is omnipotent, He *could have* created *additional* gods with all the divine characteristics except 'eternalness'. He *could have* created companions that were holy, omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, and immortal. But what would be the point? Instead of three 'guys' 'sitting around' there would be fifty or five hundred, or a hundred billion, or whatever, still 'sitting around'.

The only way Man and the Angels can provide companionship and interest to God is if they were made *and forever remain* imperfect. Man might someday be reconstituted *holy* like God and the Elect will have a glorious body like that of the Risen Savior, but it seems pretty clear that Man will never become all-knowing, omnipotent, or omnipresent. In that sense, he will forever remain an "image" of God lacking some of God's fundamental characteristics.

300.040.000      Torrey: no

### Topic 40: The Original Reproductive Capacity of Man.

300.040.010      Torrey: no

#### POINT 10: Man was created with the capability of having children; if Man had not fallen,



**children could have been born in the Garden of Eden.**

**Genesis 3:16** To the woman he said, "I will *greatly increase your pains in childbearing*; with pain you will give birth to children. ... "

Many believe that before the Fall Adam and Eve lived like the angels, i.e., that there was no sex and no children in Eden. It is true that there is no indication in the Bible that children ever existed in Eden. However, this passage makes it clear that if Man had not fallen, *at some point* Eve *could* have borne children in Eden. One can't *increase* something that doesn't exist (or at least *potentially* exist). This passage indicates that if Eve had remained in Eden she would have experienced minor discomfort during childbirth. If the passage simply said "With pain you will give birth to children" there would be no reason to reach this conclusion.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 310

---

310.000.000     Torrey: p296

### THE FALL OF MAN

310.010.000     Torrey: p296, T:I  
**Topic 10: The Fact of the Fall.**

310.010.010     Torrey: p296, T:I, P:1  
**POINT 10: Adam fell.**

**Genesis 3:1-6** [1] Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden?'" [2] The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden, [3] but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.'" [4] "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman. [5] "For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." [6] When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.

The steps in the Fall were:

1. Listening to slanders against God
2. Doubting God's word and His love
3. Looking at what God had forbidden
4. Lusting for what God had prohibited.  
(The lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye and the vainglory of life, verse 6. Compare **1 John 2:16**, below.)
5. Disobeying God's commandments.

The woman was the first in this deception and transgression; verse 1, etc.

Compare **1 Timothy 2:14** And Adam was not the one deceived; it was the woman who was

deceived and became a sinner.

310.020.000 Torrey: p296, T:II

**Topic 20: The Result of the Fall.**

310.020.010 Torrey: p297, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Through the one man's disobedience the many were made (or constituted) sinners.**

Adam stood as the representative of the race; indeed, he was the race, and all coming generations were in him.

Compare **Hebrews 7:9-10** [9] One might even say that Levi, who collects the tenth, paid the tenth through Abraham, [10] because when Melchizedek met Abraham, Levi was still in the body of his ancestor.

By Adam's fall mankind fell. "All sinned."

**Romans 5:12** Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men, *because all sinned*

Many people say: "Why should I have to suffer for what Adam and Eve did? I would rather stand for myself. I would have been smart enough and wise enough not to make the mistake they made."

God's plan, when we see the whole of it, is far more gracious than this.

Keep in mind that the *angels* were in the *visible presence* of God; they could *see* God, perceive Him as we perceive another person in the same room, communicate with Him *directly* as we carry on conversations with each other. The angels *already were in* Heaven. They were not burdened with a physical body with carnal lusts. They did not have to deal with sickness, injury, crime, financial problems, hunger, family disputes, etc. Even so, *one-third of the angels sinned*.

As the first Adam fell for us, so we all would have done for ourselves; so the second Adam obeyed for us, as none of us would have done if left to stand for ourselves.

310.020.020 Torrey: no

**POINT 20: The results to women of Eve's sin.**

**Genesis 3:6** When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also desirable for gaining wisdom, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.

**1 Timothy 2:14** And Adam was not the one deceived; it was the woman who was deceived and became a sinner.

**Genesis 3:16** To the woman he said, "I will greatly *increase* your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children. ... "

This indicates that Eve had the physical capacity to bear babies in Eden and she would have felt some discomfort; God *increased* the discomfort tremendously for all women as a punishment.

**Genesis 3:16** To the woman he said, ... "Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you."

This is a very interesting passage that is *usually* misinterpreted. Most readers interpret this as the Biblical basis for a wife's *sexual* desires for her husband. However, Dr. John Hagee has pointed out that in Greek the word for sexual desire is *eros*, from which the English word "erotic" is derived; in the Septuagint (the Greek translation of the Old Testament), the word rendered here as "desire" is not translated *eros*. This sentence means that the woman will desire her husband's *power and authority*. She will want to be in charge, to rule over her husband, but her punishment is that *he* will rule over *her*.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 320

---

320.000.000      Torrey: p298

### THE STANDING BEFORE GOD OF THOSE OUTSIDE JESUS' REDEMPTION

320.010.000      Torrey: p298, T:I

Topic 10: The Present Standing before God of men who are outside the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ.

320.010.010      Torrey: p298, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: Outside of the Redemption in Jesus Christ there is no difference in the standing of men before God: for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God; there is none righteous, no, not one.**

**Romans 3:9-11** [9] What shall we conclude then? Are we any better? Not at all! We have already made the charge that Jews and Gentiles alike are all under sin. [10] As it is written: "There is no one righteous, not even one; [11] there is no one who understands, no one who seeks God."

**Romans 3:22-23** [22] ... There is no difference, [23] for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,

**Psalms 14:2-3** [2] The LORD looks down from heaven on the sons of men to see if there are any who understand, any who seek God. [3] All have turned aside, they have together become corrupt; there is no one who does good, not even one.

**Isaiah 53:6** We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.

**1 John 1:8, 10** [8] If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. [10] If we claim we have not sinned, we make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.

320.010.020      Torrey: p298, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: Every mouth is stopped and all the world brought under the judgment of God.**

**Romans 3:19** Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, so that every mouth may be silenced and the whole world held accountable to God.

Compare **Psalms 130:3** If you, O LORD, kept a record of sins, O Lord, who could stand?

**Psalms 143:2** Do not bring your servant into judgment, for no one living is righteous before you.

320.010.030     Torrey: p299, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30:** All who are of the deeds of the law, i.e., outside of the grace of God in Jesus Christ, are under a curse.

**Galatians 3:10** All who rely on observing the law are under a curse, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the Book of the Law."

**Romans 2:12** All who sin apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who sin under the law will be judged by the law.

320.010.040     Torrey: p299, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40:** All who have not been born of God, i.e., all outside the Redemption in Jesus Christ, are children of the Devil.

**1 John 3:8-10** [8] He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work. [9] No one who is born of God will continue to sin, because God's seed remains in him; he cannot go on sinning, because he has been born of God. [10] This is how we know who the children of God are *and who the children of the devil are*: Anyone who does not do what is right *is not a child of God*; nor is anyone who does not love his brother.

The doctrine of the universal Fatherhood of God is utterly unscriptural and untrue. It is true all men are his offspring, or stock, or race, or nations (**Acts 17:28**, γένος [genos] not τέκνα [tekna], see usage in a Greek concordance), in the sense of being His creatures, having our being in Him, and made in His likeness. (See context, verses 28-29.) But we become His "sons" or "children" by faith in Jesus Christ.

**Galatians 3:26** [26] You are all sons of God *through faith in Christ Jesus*,

**John 1:12** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God --

320.020.000     Torrey: p299, T:II

**Topic 20:** The Present Condition of men outside of the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ.

320.020.010     Torrey: p299, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10:** They are darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, hardened in heart.

**Ephesians 4:18** They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts.

320.020.020     Torrey: p300, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: The natural man does not receives the things of the Spirit of God, neither can he know them.**

**1 Corinthians 2:14** The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned.

320.020.030 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: The natural heart is deceitful above all things and desperately sick.**

**Jeremiah 17:9** The heart is deceitful above all things and beyond cure. Who can understand it?

320.020.040 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: The entire moral and intellectual nature of unredeemed man is corrupted by sin.**

**Genesis 6:5** The LORD saw how great man's wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time.

**Genesis 6:12** God saw how corrupt the earth had become, for all the people on earth had corrupted their ways.

**Genesis 8:21** The LORD smelled the pleasing aroma and said in his heart: "Never again will I curse the ground because of man, even though every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood. And never again will I destroy all living creatures, as I have done.

**Psalms 94:11** The LORD knows the thoughts of man; he knows that they are futile.

320.020.050 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: The outward life of unredeemed man is vile and detestable.**

**Titus 3:3** At one time we too were foolish, disobedient, deceived and enslaved by all kinds of passions and pleasures. We lived in malice and envy, being hated and hating one another.

**Ephesians 2:3** All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our sinful nature and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature objects of wrath.

**Colossians 3:5, 7** [5] Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and greed, which is idolatry. [7] You used to walk in these ways, in the life you once lived.

320.020.060 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: Men unsaved by Christ are the slaves of sin, in helpless and hopeless captivity to the law of sin and death.**

**Romans 7:5,8, 14-15, 19, 23- 24** [5] For when we were controlled by the sinful nature, the sinful passions aroused by the law were at work in our bodies, so that we bore fruit for death. [8] But sin, seizing the opportunity afforded by the commandment, produced in me every kind of covetous desire. For apart from law, sin is dead. [14] We know that the law is spiritual; but I am unspiritual, sold as a slave to sin. [15] I do not understand what I do. For what I want to do I do not do, but what I hate I do. [19] For what I do is not the good I want to do; no, the evil I do not want to do -- this I keep on doing. [23] but I see another law at work in the members of my body, waging war against the law of

my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin at work within my members. [24] What a wretched man I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death?

**Romans 8:1-2** [1] Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, [2] because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death.

**Romans 6:17** But thanks be to God that, though you used to be slaves to sin, you wholeheartedly obeyed the form of teaching to which you were entrusted.

320.020.070 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: Outside of redemption in Christ men are under the control of the Prince of the power of the air.**

**Ephesians 2:1-2** [1] As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, [2] in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

320.020.080 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:8

**POINT 80: By nature, men are children of wrath.**

**Ephesians 2:3** All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our sinful nature and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature objects of wrath.

320.020.090 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:9

**POINT 90: The mind of the flesh is enmity against God; it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be: and those who are in the flesh cannot please God.**

**Romans 8:5-9, New American Bible** [5] Those who live according to the flesh are intent on the things of the flesh, those who live according to the spirit, on those of the spirit. [6] The tendency of the flesh is toward death but that of the spirit toward life and peace. [7] The flesh in its tendency is at enmity with God; it is not subject to God's law. Indeed, it cannot be; [8] those who are in the flesh cannot please God. [9] But you are not in the flesh; you are in the spirit, since the Spirit of God dwells in you. If anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ.

It is obvious from this passage that "being in the flesh" does not mean the time between the birth of our physical body and the death of our physical body. It means those who let man's carnal nature have reign over their actions -- lewdness and sexual immorality, greed, selfishness, lack of charity, jealousy, suspicion, hate, violence, anger, revenge, and so on.

320.020.100 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:10

**POINT 100: Men outside of Christ's saving power are dead through their trespasses and sins.**

**Ephesians 2:1-2** [1] As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, [2] in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

320.020.110 Torrey: p300, T:II, P:11

**POINT 110: The whole world, the whole mass of men who have not received Christ, lie in the evil one, rest in his arms, in his power, in himself.**

**1 John 5:19** We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control



of the evil one.

CONCLUSION. -- The present standing or condition of men out of Christ as pictured in the Bible is dark and hopeless. One word will express it -- *lost*, utterly lost. This is very different from the conception of man that is popular in novels, on the lecture platform and in many pulpits today. But it accords with the facts. The more one has to do with men and women, and the more one comes to know the depths of his own heart, the more convinced he becomes of the truthfulness and accuracy in every line of this hideous and repulsive picture. The nearer one gets to God, the more fully he sees the truth of this picture; the fact that one has an exalted opinion of human nature, and his own nature, does not show that he is living near God, but far from God. Compare Isaiah's, Job's and the Psalmist's conception of self and man when they were brought face to face with God:

**Isaiah 6:1, 5** In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple. [5] "Woe to me!" I cried. "I am ruined! For I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips, and my eyes have seen the King, the LORD Almighty."

**Job 42:5-6** [5] My ears had heard of you but now my eyes have seen you. [6] Therefore I despise myself and repent in dust and ashes.

**Psalms 14:2-3** [2] The LORD looks down from heaven on the sons of men to see if there are any who understand, any who seek God. [3] All have turned aside, they have together become corrupt; there is no one who does good, not even one.

Evidently those who live nearest God and see things most nearly from His standpoint have the poorest opinion of self and human nature.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 330

---

330.000.000      Torrey: p303

### THE DESTINY OF THOSE WHO REJECT REDEMPTION THROUGH JESUS

330.010.000      Torrey: p303, T:I

Topic 10: The Future Destiny of those who do not believe that Jesus is the Son of God.

330.010.010      Torrey: p303, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: Those who do not believe that Jesus is the Messiah and Son of God shall die in their sins; where He goes they cannot come.**

**John 8:24** I told you that you would die in your sins; if you do not believe that I am the one I claim to be, you will indeed die in your sins.

Note -- The faith here spoken of is not a mere opinion, but a faith that governs the life. Compare John's use of faith everywhere, e.g.:

**1 John 5:1, 4-5** [1] Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves the father loves his child as well. [4] for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith. [5] Who is it that overcomes the world? Only he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

330.020.000      Torrey: p303, T:II

Topic 20: The Future Destiny of those who have done ill.

330.020.010      Torrey: p303, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: All men shall be raised again from the dead, those who reject Christ as well as those who accept Him, but to the one it will be a resurrection to life, to the other a resurrection to judgment.**

**John 5:28-29** [28] "Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice [29] and come out -- those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.

**1 Corinthians 15:22** For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive.

330.030.000 Torrey: p303, T:III

Topic 30: The Future Destiny of the factious, the disobedient.

330.030.010 Torrey: p303, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: To those who are factious and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, there shall be wrath and indignation, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that works evil.**

**Romans 2:5-6, 8-9** [5] But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for the day of God's wrath, when his righteous judgment will be revealed. [6] God "will give to each person according to what he has done." [8] But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be wrath and anger. [9] There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile;

Compare **John 14:6** Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.

Compare **John 3:18-19** [18] Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son.

330.040.000 Torrey: p304, T:IV

Topic 40: The Future Destiny of those who do not know God and do not obey the Gospel.

330.040.010 Torrey: p304, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: Those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus, shall suffer punishment, even eternal destruction from the face of the Lord and from the glory of His might, when He shall come to be glorified in His saints.**

**2 Thessalonians 1:8-9** [8] He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. [9] They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power

Note -- We shall see later the meaning of the term "destruction."

OBJECTION: How could any being that claims to be a 'loving' God condemn hundreds of millions of people to *everlasting* punishment for not knowing Him and not obeying His Son's gospel if they never heard of Him or His Son? What about people who died before Jesus was born? What about people in India, Asia, Australia, the Pacific Rim and the Western Hemisphere, where Christianity did not arrive until centuries after Christ's death?

ANSWER: In this excerpt the term "do not know God" is misleading; do not confuse it with "do not know *of* God." *Every* man *knows of* the existence God *because God has written such knowledge into the hearts of men.* **Romans 2:12-16.** A person who does not *know God* chooses to ignore this inborn attraction.

Also see the discussion below.

330.050.000 Torrey: p304, T:V

Topic 50: The Future Destiny of those whose names are not found written in the book of

life.

330.050.010 Torrey: p304, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10:** At the judgment before the great white throne anyone whose name is not found written in the book of life shall be cast into the lake of fire.

**Revelation 20:15** If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

330.060.000 Torrey: p304, T:VI

**Topic 60:** The Future Destiny of those who neglect Christ by neglecting His brethren.

330.060.010 Torrey: p304, T:VI, P:1

**POINT 10:** When Christ comes to judge the nations He shall say to those on His left hand, i.e., those who have neglected Him by neglecting their duty to His needy brethren, "Depart from me, you cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the Devil and his angels," and these shall go away into eternal punishment.

**Matthew 25:41, 46** [41] Then he will say to those on his left, "Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels." [46] Then they will go away to eternal punishment, but the righteous to eternal life.

330.070.000 Torrey: p305, T:VII

**Topic 70:** The Future Destiny of the fearful, unbelieving, etc.

330.070.010 Torrey: p305, T:VII, P:1

**POINT 10:** The fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers (pimps and madams), and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone.

This section is particularly significant, and various translations can lead to different, sometimes troubling, interpretations; hence, the 'laundry list' is included from several translations. One must particularly keep in mind that many words had different connotations in King James' time.

**Revelation 21:8, New International Version** But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars -- their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.

**Revelation 21:8, Revised Standard Version** But as for the cowardly, the faithless, the polluted [by sin], as for murderers, fornicators, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars ...

(The **New English Bible** essentially combines these two.)

**Revelation 21:8, King James Version** But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

**Revelation 21:8, New American Bible** As for the cowards and traitors to the faith, the depraved and murderers, the fornicators and sorcerers, the idol-worshippers and deceivers of every sort -- their lot is the fiery pool of burning sulphur, the second death!

## == DISCUSSION ==

It is important to have a proper perspective on this section. Taken literally, it excludes pretty much every person. Taken literally, it means you will burn in Hell forever because your aunt asked if you like the necktie she gave you for Christmas and you said "It's nice," but you really didn't like the color. Taken literally, it means you will burn in Hell forever if you are afraid of snakes, mice, rats, or bees, or your child getting hurt by a street gang. Taken literally, it means that if your pastor says "I need someone to bring some food to the homeless shelter, would you mind helping out?" and you say "I'd be glad to," if you really would prefer to watch a football game you will be condemned to eternal punishment because you lied. Obviously, the correct interpretation of this section is important.

It should be specifically noted that by choice of words and punctuation the New American Bible puts the list in a somewhat different light. Each of the other translations separates *each* item in the list by commas, seemingly indicating they are equal and unrelated, e.g., "the fearful ... will ...", "the unbelieving ... will ...", etc. However, the New American version groups them, e.g., the footnote states "*Cowards*: their conviction is so weak that they deny Christ in time of trial and become *traitors*." [italics added]. *Deceivers* seems to give a much clearer picture of the passage's meaning than "liars"; "deceit" connotes something sinister, something *evil*. Only the simplest of fools would consider "The necktie looks nice." or fear of snakes to be evil or deceitful.

330.070.012     Torrey: no

**POINT 12: We must beware of relying on distinctions that do not exist. Few people are practicing witches or worship metal statues, yet many practices that are becoming commonplace fall under the biblical prohibitions against "sorcery" or "idolatry." Those who engage in them will be condemned.**

It is important not to underestimate the significance **Revelation 21:8**. Most people would say "I don't practice sorcery, witchcraft or Satanism. I don't worship idols; yes, I have a statue of Buddha at work, but it's just a bookend."

Do you read horoscopes, astrological charts or Tarot cards? Do you seek advice from 'psychics' or fortune tellers? Do you practice 'visualization' or self-help techniques which teach that if you visualize yourself as having something you will obtain it, that you can actually control and affect the world around you simply with the power of your mind? Do you attempt to contact 'outside intelligences' or 'inner guides' or 'spirit guides' or 'angels' or even Jesus or the Holy Spirit by the use of altered states such as meditation, yoga, mantras, hypnotic regression to past lives, channeling, mediums, or Ouija boards?

Each of these practices comes under the term "sorcery" as it is used -- and condemned -- in the Bible. According to a number of researchers, contacting the spirit world is actually quite simple; it basically simply involves concentrating. Recent studies have shown that even people who *don't* believe in the existence of the spirit world have been able to make such contact.

God's angels, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit do not commune with people via altered mental states; they cannot be 'summoned up' by humans. *They* set the time, place, terms, manner, and purpose of the contact, in accordance with God's desire.

There are only two groups of spirits: those that are loyal to God and those that oppose him. Each group wants to attract humans to its side. Rebellious spirits have no qualms about using deceit and trickery to accomplish their goals; they will claim to be 'angels', 'flying saucer' aliens (see *UFOs in the*

*New Age* by William Alnor, sponsored by the Christian Research Organization), Jesus, the Holy Spirit, or whatever else works to attract the unwary.

330.080.000      Torrey: p305, T:VIII  
**Topic 80: Questions Answered.**

FIRST QUESTION: Is the fire spoken of as the future penalty of sin literal fire?

**Reviser's Note:** For centuries, this has been an area of substantial debate among theologians. By no means is the answer as clear-cut as Torrey makes it appear. However, I would point out the response of any lawyer: Does it really *matter*? If a criminal is sentenced to death, does it really matter whether he is executed by hanging, firing squad, electrocution, the gas chamber, or lethal injection? The significant point about hell is that it is an absolutely horrible place to live.

ANSWER: (1) Note the frequency with which the word fire and synonymous expressions are used:

**Matthew 7:19** Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.

**John 15:6** If anyone does not remain in me, he is like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned.

**Isaiah 66:24** And they will go out and look upon the dead bodies of those who rebelled against me; their worm will not die, nor will their fire be quenched, and they will be loathsome to all mankind.

**Hebrews 6:8** But land that produces thorns and thistles is worthless and is in danger of being cursed. In the end it will be burned.

**Hebrews 10:26-27** [26] If we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, [27] but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God.

**Revelation 20:15** If anyone's name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

**Revelation 21:8** But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars -- their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.

(2) **Matthew 13:30, 41-42** Let both grow together until the harvest. At that time I will tell the harvesters: "First collect the weeds and tie them in bundles to be burned; then gather the wheat and bring it into my barn." [41] The Son of Man will send out his angels, and they will weed out of his kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil. [42] They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

In a parable we expect figures, but in the explanation of the parable we expect the figures to be explained by the literal facts which they are intended to represent. But in the parable of the tares every item of the parable is explained except the fire; that remains fire in the interpretation of the parable as well as in the parable itself.

Compare **Matthew 13:47-50** [47] "Once again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net that was let down into the lake and caught all kinds of fish. [48] When it was full, the fisher- men pulled it up on

the shore. Then they sat down and collected the good fish in baskets, but threw the bad away. [49] This is how it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come and separate the wicked from the righteous [50] and throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

330.081.000 Torrey: p306, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DEATH

### Topic 81: Death in the Lake of Fire.

SECOND QUESTION: Is the Lake of Fire: (a) a place of conscious torment, (b) a place of annihilation of being or (c) a place of non-conscious existence?

ANSWER: The punishment of the wicked is spoken of as "death" and "destruction." What do these words mean in Biblical usage?

330.081.010 Torrey: p306, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DEATH- 1

**POINT 10: The word "death" is applied to sinners while still existing, but existing in a wrong way -- while they have life in the sense of existence, but not true life, real life, in the sense of right existence.**

**1 Timothy 5:6** But the widow who lives for pleasure is dead even while she lives.

**Ephesians 2:1** [1] As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins,

Compare the Authorized and Revised Versions of **1 Timothy 6:19** In this way they will lay up treasure for themselves as a firm foundation for the coming age, so that they may take hold of the life that is truly life.

330.081.020 Torrey: p306, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DEATH- 2

**POINT 20: The death which is the final outcome of a life of sin and unbelief is defined in the Bible as a portion in the place of torment.**

**Revelation 21:8** But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars -- their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.

330.081.030 Torrey: p306, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DEATH- 3

**POINT 30: Life is defined in the Bible not merely as existence but as right existence, knowing the true God, the life manifested in Jesus Christ. Death, then, is not mere non-existence, but wrong, wretched, debased devilish existence.**

**John 17:3** Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.

**1 John 1:2** The life appeared; we have seen it and testify to it, and we proclaim to you the eternal life, which was with the Father and has appeared to us.

330.082.000 Torrey: p307, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DESTRUCTION

### Topic 82: Destruction

330.082.010 Torrey: p307, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DESTRUCTION-1

**POINT 10: When anything is said "to perish" (the verb from which the noun commonly**



**translated "destruction" and "perdition" is derived) it is not meant that it ceases to be, but that it is so ruined that it no longer subserves the use for which it was designed.**

(See Thayer's Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament.)

**Matthew 9:17** Neither do men pour new wine into old wineskins. If they do, the skins will burst, the wine will run out and the wineskins will be ruined. No, they pour new wine into new wineskins, and both are preserved.

Compare **Matthew 26:8** When the disciples saw this, they were indignant. "Why this *waste*?" they asked.

At various places the same word is translated "waste", "perdition", and "destruction."

330.082.020 Torrey: p307, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DESTRUCTION-2

**POINT 20: "Destruction" is clearly defined in the New Testament as the condition of beings in a place of conscious and unending torment.**

**Revelation 17:8** The beast, which you saw, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss and go to his destruction. The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come.

**Revelation 17:11** The beast who once was, and now is not, is an eighth king. He belongs to the seven and is going to his destruction.

**2 Peter 3:16** He writes the same way in all his letters, speaking in them of these matters. His letters contain some things that are hard to understand, which ignorant and unstable people distort, as they do the other Scriptures, to their own destruction.

**Philippians 3:19** Their destiny is destruction, their god is their stomach, and their glory is in their shame. Their mind is on earthly things.

**2 Peter 3:7** By the same word the present heavens and earth are reserved for fire, being kept for the day of judgment and destruction of ungodly men.

Now if we can find what the beast "goes" into, we shall know what "destruction" or "perdition" means. Turn to the following:

**Revelation 19:20** But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. With these signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshiped his image. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur.

**Revelation 20:7, 10** [7] When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison ... [10] And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

**Revelation 20:10, Revised Standard Version** [10] [A]nd the devil who had deceived them was thrown into the lake of fire and sulfur where the beast and the false prophet were, and they will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.



Here we find the beast and the false prophet still in the lake of fire and being tormented after a thousand years have passed away.

That "destruction" does not mean annihilation is also evident from the following:

**Luke 19:10** For the Son of Man came to seek and to save what was lost.

330.082.030 Torrey: p308, T:VIII, Q:2, P:DESTRUCTION-3

**POINT 30: The ultimate condition of those who receive the mark of the beast is described as a condition of unending, unrelenting, conscious torment.**

**Revelation 14:10-11** [10] he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath. He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. [11] And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.

OBJECTION: "This passage does not refer to the eternal state -- it speaks of 'day and night.'"

ANSWER: (1) Compare:

**Revelation 4:8** Each of the four living creatures had six wings and was covered with eyes all around, even under his wings. *Day and night* they never stop saying: "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come."

**Revelation 7:14-15** [14] I answered, "Sir, you know." And he said, "These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. [15] Therefore, "they are before the throne of God and serve him *day and night* in his temple; and he who sits on the throne will spread his tent over them.

**Revelation 20:10** And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented *day and night* for ever and ever.

(2)

**Revelation 19:20** But the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who had performed the miraculous signs on his behalf. With these signs he had deluded those who had received the mark of the beast and worshiped his image. The two of them were thrown alive into the fiery lake of burning sulfur.

330.083.000 Torrey: p309, T:VIII, Q:3

**Topic 83: The condition of torment is endless.**

330.083.010 Torrey: p309, T:VIII, Q:3, P:

**POINT 10: They are tormented day and night for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night.**

THIRD QUESTION: Is this condition of torment endless?

ANSWER:

**Matthew 25:41** Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.

Compare **Revelation 20:10** And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented *day and night for ever and ever*.

**Revelation 14:11** And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.

**2 Thessalonians 1:9-10** [9] They will be punished with everlasting destruction and shut out from the presence of the Lord and from the majesty of his power [10] on the day he comes to be glorified in his holy people and to be marveled at among all those who have believed. This includes you, because you believed our testimony to you.

What does "for ever and ever" mean?

Literally, "unto the ages of the ages." The expression occurs twelve times in the Book of Revelation.

**Revelation 1:6** [5] ... To him who loves us and has freed us from our sins by his blood, [6] and has made us to be a kingdom and priests to serve his God and Father -- to him be glory and power for ever and ever! Amen.

**Revelation 4:9-10** [9] Whenever the living creatures give glory, honor and thanks to him who sits on the throne and who lives for ever and ever, [10] the twenty-four elders fall down before him who sits on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever and ever. They lay their crowns before the throne and say:

**Revelation 5:13** Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing: "To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, for ever and ever!"

**Revelation 7:12** [12] saying: "Amen! Praise and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God for ever and ever. Amen!"

**Revelation 10:6** And he swore by him who lives for ever and ever, who created the heavens and all that is in them, the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it, and said, "There will be no more delay!

**Revelation 11:15** The seventh angel sounded his trumpet, and there were loud voices in heaven, which said: "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever."

**Revelation 14:11** And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name."

**Revelation 15:7** Then one of the four living creatures gave to the seven angels seven golden bowls filled with the wrath of God, who lives for ever and ever.

**Revelation 19:2-3** [2] for true and just are his judgments. He has condemned the great prostitute who corrupted the earth by her adulteries. He has avenged on her the blood of his servants." [3] And again they shouted: "Hallelujah! The smoke from her goes up for ever and ever."

**Revelation 20:10** And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

**Revelation 22:5** There will be no more night. They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, for the Lord God will give them light. And they will reign for ever and ever.

Eight times it refers to the duration of the existence or reign or glory of God and Christ. Once to the duration of the blessed reign of the righteous, and in the three remaining instances to the duration of the torment of the Devil, Beast, False Prophet, and the wicked.

The word frequently translated "eternal" or "everlasting" means "age-long", and may be used of a limited period; but the expression "for ever and ever" means "unto the age of the ages" (**Revelation 19:3; 20:10; 14:11**), i.e., not merely throughout an age, but throughout all ages. It is a picture not merely of years tumbling upon years, but of ages tumbling upon ages in endless succession. It is never in a single instance used of a limited period. Nothing could more plainly or graphically picture absolute endlessness.

330.084.000     Torrey: p310, T:VIII, Q:4

**Topic 84: FOURTH QUESTION: When are the issues of eternity settled?**

330.084.010     Torrey: p310, T:VIII, Q:4, P:1

**POINT 10: Those who die in their sins cannot go where Jesus is.**

**John 8:21** Once more Jesus said to them, "I am going away, and you will look for me, and you will die in your sin. Where I go, you cannot come."

OBJECTION: Jesus is God; therefore, He is omnipresent, i.e., present *everywhere*. Also:

**Revelation 14:10-11** [10] he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath. *He will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb.* [11] And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.

ANSWER: As pointed out earlier, God is present everywhere, but He is not present everywhere *in the same sense*. **John 8:21** literally means that sinners cannot go to Heaven.

330.084.020     Torrey: p310, T:VIII, Q:4, P:2

**POINT 20: It is appointed unto men once to die, and after this judgment.**

**Hebrews 9:27-28** [27] Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment, [28] so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.

330.084.030     Torrey: p310, T:VIII, Q:4, P:3

**POINT 30: All who are in their graves who have done evil shall be raised unto a resurrection of judgment.**

**John 5:28-29** [28] "Do not be amazed at this, for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice [29] and come out -- those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.

330.084.040 Torrey: p310, T:VIII, Q:4, P:4

**POINT 40: A great gulf stands between those who pass out of this world lost and those who pass out accepted by God; there is no passing from one side to the other. The destinies of eternity are settled in the life that is now.**

**Luke 16:26** [26] And besides all this, between us and you a great chasm has been fixed, so that those who want to go from here to you cannot, nor can anyone cross over from there to us.

330.085.000 Torrey: p311, T:VIII

**Topic 85: FIFTH QUESTION: May those who have never heard of Christ in this world have another opportunity?**

330.085.010 Torrey: p311, T:VIII, Q:5

**POINT 10: God wrote His law into the hearts of men. Each man has sufficient light to achieve or lose salvation.**

**Jeremiah 31:33-34** [33] "This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel after that time," declares the LORD. "*I will put my law in their minds and write it on their hearts.* I will be their God, and they will be my people. [34] *No longer will a man teach his neighbor, or a man his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' because they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest,*" declares the LORD. "For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more."

**Romans 2:12-16** [12] All who sin apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who sin under the law will be judged by the law. [13] For it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God's sight, but it is those who obey the law who will be declared righteous. [14] (*Indeed, when Gentiles, who do not have the law, do by nature things required by the law, they are a law for themselves, even though they do not have the law, [15] since they show that the requirements of the law are written on their hearts, their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts now accusing, now even defending them.*) [16] This will take place on the day when God will judge men's secrets through Jesus Christ, as my gospel declares.

Note: -- The passage quoted here was not given to show, as some strangely imagine, how men are saved by the light of nature, but how the Gentile is under condemnation by the law written in his heart, just as the Jew is under condemnation by the law of Moses. The conclusion of the whole matter is in the following:

**Romans 3:19-22** [19] Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, so that every mouth may be silenced and the whole world held accountable to God. [20] Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin. [21] But now a righteousness from God, apart from law, has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. [22] This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference,

The truth of this Point is proved by archaeologists and historians of many cultures. Murder, robbery, adultery, theft, false testimony, bestiality, and many other activities prohibited in the Old Testament are prohibited by all civilized societies, even those that have never heard of Jehovah, Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

GENERAL CONCLUSION: The future state of those who reject the redemption offered to them in Christ is plainly declared to be a state of conscious, unutterable, endless torment and anguish. This conception is a n a wful and a ppalling one. It is , however, the Scriptural c onception and a lso a reasonable one when we come to see the appalling nature of sin, and especially the appalling nature of the sin of trampling under foot God's mercy toward sinners, and rejecting God's glorious Son, whom His love has provided as a Savior.

Shallow views of sin and of God's holiness, and of the glory of Jesus Christ and His claims upon us, lie at the bottom of weak theories of the doom of the impenitent. *When we see sin in all its hideousness and enormity, the Holiness of God in all its perfection, and the glory of Jesus Christ in all its infinity, nothing but a doctrine that those who persist in the choice of sin, who love darkness rather than light, and who persist in the rejection of the Son of God, shall endure everlasting anguish, will sanctify the demands of our own moral intuitions.* Nothing but the fact that we dread suffering more than we loathe sin, and more than we love the glory of Jesus Christ, makes us repudiate the thought that beings who eternally choose sin should eternally suffer, or that men who despise God's mercy and spurn His Son should be given over to endless anguish.

330.086.000      Torrey: p312, T:VIII, Q:6

Topic 86: What about our impenitent friends and loved ones?

330.086.010      Torrey: p3 , T: , P:1

**POINT 10:**

It is better to recognize facts, no matter how unwelcome, and try to save these friends from the doom to which they are certainly hurrying than to quarrel with facts and seek to remove them by shutting our eyes to them. You cannot avert a hurricane by merely refusing to believe it is coming.

If we love Christ supremely, as we should love Him, and realize His glory and His claims upon men, as we should realize them, we will say if the dearest friend we have on earth *persists in trampling Christ under foot* he ought to be tormented forever and ever.

Suppose one you greatly love should commit some hideous wrong against one you love more, and persist in it eternally, would you not consent to his eternal punishment?

If, after men have sinned and God still offers them mercy, and makes the tremendous sacrifice of His Son to save them -- if they despise that mercy and trample God's Son under foot, if then they are consigned to everlasting torment, I say: "Amen! Hallelujah! True and righteous are thy judgments, O Lord!"

At all events the doctrine of conscious, eternal torment for impenitent men is clearly revealed in the Word of God, and whether we can defend it on philosophical grounds or not, it is our business to believe it; and leave it to the clearer light of Eternity to explain what we cannot now understand, realizing that God may have infinitely wise reasons for doing things for which we in our ignorance can see no sufficient reason at all. It is the most ludicrous conceit for beings so limited and foolish as even the wisest of men are, to attempt to dogmatize how a God of infinite wisdom must act. All we know as to how God will act is what God has seen fit to tell us.

In conclusion, two things are certain. First, the more closely men walk with God and the more devoted they become to His service, the more likely they are to believe this doctrine. Many men tell us they love their fellow man too much to believe this doctrine; but the men who show their love in more practical ways than sentimental protestations about it, the men who show their love for their fellow men as Jesus Christ showed His, by laying down their lives for them, *they* believe it, even as Jesus Christ Himself believed it.

As Christians become more worldly and easy-going they grow loose in their doctrine concerning the doom of the impenitent. The fact that loose doctrines are spreading so rapidly and widely in our day is nothing for them, but against them, for worldliness is also spreading in the Church.

**1 Timothy 4:1** The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons.

**2 Timothy 3:1** But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days.

**2 Timothy 4:2-3** [2] Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage -- with great patience and careful instruction. [3] For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear.

Increasing laxity of life and increasing laxity of doctrine go arm in arm. A church that lives in self-indulgence during the week, enjoys a doctrine on the Lord's Day that makes the punishment of the wicked not so awful after all.

Second, men who accept a loose doctrine regarding the ultimate penalty of sin (Restorationism or Universalism or Annihilationism) lose their power for God. They may be very clever at argument and zealous in proselytizing, but they are poor at soul-saving. They are seldom found beseeching men to be reconciled to God. They are more likely to be found trying to upset the faith of those already won by the efforts of others, than winning men who have no faith at all. If you really believe the doctrine of the endless, conscious torment of the impenitent, and the doctrine really gets hold of you, you will work as you never worked before for the salvation of the lost. If you in any way abate the doctrine, it will abate your zeal. Torrey stated that time and again he came up to this awful doctrine and tried to find some way of escape from it, but when he failed, as he always did, when he was honest with the Bible and with himself, he returned to his work with an increased burden for souls and an intensified determination to spend and be spent for their salvation.

Finally: Do not believe this doctrine in a cold, intellectual, merely argumentative way. If you do, and try to teach it, you will repel men from it. But meditate upon it in its practical, personal bearings, until your heart is burdened by the awful peril of the wicked and you rush out to spend the last dollar, if need be, and the last ounce of strength you have, in saving those imperiled men from the certain, awful hell of conscious agony and shame to which they are fast hurrying.

330.086.020      Torrey: no

**POINT 20: The popular belief and teaching that God will forgive sinners an infinite number of times is totally unbiblical. Those who persist in their sin up to their physical death can not obtain forgiveness.**

**Luke 13:6** [6] Then he told this parable: "A man had a fig tree, planted in his vineyard, and he went to look for fruit on it, but did not find any. [7] So he said to the man who took care of the

vineyard, 'For three years now I've been coming to look for fruit on this fig tree and haven't found any. Cut it down! Why should it use up the soil?' [8] "'Sir,' the man replied, 'leave it alone for one more year, and I'll dig around it and fertilize it. [9] If it bears fruit next year, fine! If not, then cut it down.'"

330.086.030     Torrey: no

**POINT 30: God makes an extra effort to help those who are unrepentant, in an effort to save each of his children.**

**Luke 13:8** "Sir," the man replied, "leave it [an unfruitful tree] alone for one more year, and *I'll dig around it and fertilize it.*"

330.086.030     Torrey: no

**POINT 40: Even though God sincerely desires that each person be saved, He is only willing to go so far. He gives each person more than enough time to bear fruit but, ultimately, He leaves to each individual the choice of salvation or damnation.**

**Luke 13:9** If it bears fruit next year, fine! *If not, then cut it down.*"

---



# What the Bible Teaches

## Chapter 340

---

340.000.000      Torrey: p315

### JUSTIFICATION

340.010.000      Torrey: p315, T:I

**Topic 10:** What does Justify mean?

340.010.010      Torrey: p , T:I, P:1

**POINT 10:**

NOTE: -- The way to decide this is by an examination of the Biblical use of the word and the words derived from it. The question is not "What is the etymological significance of the word?" for words are frequently used in a meaning widely different from their etymological significance. The question is "What is the significance of the word as determined by its usage in the Bible?" The way to determine this is by taking a Concordance and Bible, and looking up every passage in which the word is used. The following passages are sufficient to illustrate the Biblical usage. In the passages taken from the Old Testament, the Septuagint uses the same Greek verb that is translated "justify" in the New Testament.

**Deuteronomy 25:1** When men have a dispute, they are to take it to court and the judges will decide the case, *acquitting* the innocent and condemning the guilty.

**Exodus 23:7** [7] Have nothing to do with a false charge and do not put an innocent or honest person to death, for I will not *acquit* the guilty.

**Isaiah 5:22-23** [22] Woe to those who are heroes at drinking wine and champions at mixing drinks, [23] who *acquit* the guilty for a bribe, but deny justice to the innocent.

**Luke 16:15** He said to them, "You are the ones who *justify* yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts. What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's sight.

**Romans 2:13** For it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God's sight, but it is those who obey the law who will be *declared righteous*.

**Romans 3:23-24** [23] for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, [24] and are *justified* freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus.



**Luke 18:14** [14] I tell you that this man, rather than the other, went home *justified* before God. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.

**Romans 4:2-8** [2] If, in fact, Abraham was *justified* by works, he had something to boast about -- but not before God. [3] What does the Scripture say? "Abraham believed God, and it was *credited to him* as righteousness." [4] Now when a man works, his wages are not credited to him as a gift, but as an obligation. [5] However, to the man who does not work but trusts God who *justifies* the wicked, his *faith is credited as righteousness*. [6] David says the same thing when he speaks of the blessedness of the man to whom God credits righteousness apart from works: [7] "Blessed are they whose transgressions are forgiven, whose sins are covered. [8] Blessed is the man whose sin the Lord will never count against him."

In Biblical usage, to "justify" does not mean "to make righteous." It means to "reckon", "declare", or "show to be righteous." A man is justified before God when God reckons him righteous.

NOTE -- Etymologically, the word translated "justify" means "to make righteous," but Thayer, in his Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament, says: "This meaning is extremely rare, if not altogether doubtful." It certainly is not the New Testament usage of the word.

340.020.000      Torrey: p316, T:II

**Topic 20: How are Men Justified.**

340.020.010      Torrey: p316, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Men not justified by works of the law. No man is justified by works of the law.**

**Romans 3:20** Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin.

**Galatians 3:10** All who rely on observing the law are under a curse, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the Book of the Law."

**Romans 3:23-24** [23] for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, [24] and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus.

Because in order to be justified by works of the law we must continue *in all things* which are written in the book of the law to do them. This no man has done, but all men have sinned. The moment the law is broken at any point, justification by works of the law are under the curse. God did not give men the law with the intention of justifying men thereby, but to produce conviction of sin, to stop men's mouths, and to lead them to Christ.

**Romans 3:19-20** [19] Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, so that every mouth may be silenced and the whole world held accountable to God. [20] Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin.

**Galatians 3:24** So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith.

Yet strangely enough there are many today preaching the law as the way of salvation.

340.020.020 Torrey: p317, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Men are justified as a free gift by God's grace through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ.**

**Romans 3:23-24** [23] for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, [24] and are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that came by Christ Jesus.

Justification is not on the ground of any desert there is in us. It is a gift God bestows without pay. The channel through which it is bestowed is the redemption that is in Jesus Christ.

340.020.030 Torrey: p317, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: Men are justified or counted righteous in Christ's blood -- i.e., on the ground of Christ's propitiatory death.**

**Romans 5:9** Since we have now been justified by his blood, how much more shall we be saved from God's wrath through him!

**Galatians 3:13** Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree."

**1 Peter 2:24** He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree, so that we might die to sins and live for righteousness; by his wounds you have been healed.

**Isaiah 53:6** [6] We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.

**2 Corinthians 5:21** God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

The ground of justification is the shed blood of Christ.

340.020.040 Torrey: p317, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Men are justified on condition of faith in Jesus.**

**Romans 3:25-26** [25] God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. He did this to demonstrate his justice, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished -- [26] he did it to demonstrate his justice at the present time, so as to be just and the one who justifies those who have faith in Jesus.

**Romans 4:5** However, to the man who does not work but trusts God who justifies the wicked, his faith is credited as righteousness.

**Romans 5:1** Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

**Acts 13:39** Through him everyone who believes is justified from everything you could not be justified from by the law of Moses.

Faith makes ours the shed-blood, which is the ground of justification, and we are justified when we believe in Him who shed the blood. Provision is made for our justification by the shedding of the

blood, we are actually justified when we believe.

340.020.050 Torrey: p318, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: A man is justified by faith apart from works of the law -- i.e., he is justified on condition that he believes even though he has no works to offer as a ground upon which he might claim justification.**

**Romans 4:5** However, to the man who does not work but trusts God who justifies the wicked, his faith is credited as righteousness.

When he ceases to work for justification and simply believes in Him who justifies the ungodly, that faith is reckoned for righteousness, and he, the believer, is counted righteous.

The question is not, have you any works to offer, but do you believe in Him who justifies the ungodly? Works have nothing to do with justification except to hinder it when we trust in them. The blood of Christ secures it, faith in Christ appropriates it. We are justified, not by our works, but by His work. We are justified upon the simple and single ground of His blood, and upon the simple and single condition of our faith. It is exceedingly difficult to hold men to this doctrine of justification on faith apart from works of the law. They are constantly seeking to bring in works somewhere.

340.020.060 Torrey: p318, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: The faith that leads to justification is a faith "with the heart."**

**Romans 10:9-10** [9] That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. [10] For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

In the Bible, the "heart" stands for the entire inner man, thought, feeling and purpose. To believe "with the heart," is to believe with the whole man. It involves the surrender of the thought, the feelings and the will to the truth believed. A heart faith is more than mere opinion. It is a conviction that governs the whole inner man and consequently shapes the outward life.

340.020.070 Torrey: p319, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: The faith that one says he has, but which does not *manifest itself in action* along the line of the faith professed, will not justify. The faith that justifies is the real faith that leads to action accordant with the truth professed.**

**James 2:14-24** [14] What good is it, my brothers, if a man claims to have faith but has no deeds? Can such faith save him? [15] Suppose a brother or sister is without clothes and daily food. [16] If one of you says to him, "Go, I wish you well; keep warm and well fed," but does nothing about his physical needs, what good is it? [17] In the same way, faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead. [18] But someone will say, "You have faith; I have deeds." Show me your faith without deeds, and I will show you my faith by what I do. [19] You believe that there is one God. Good! Even the demons believe that -- and shudder. [20] You foolish man, do you want evidence that faith without deeds is useless? [21] Was not our ancestor Abraham considered righteous *for what he did* when he offered his son Isaac on the altar? [22] You see that his faith and his actions were working together, and *his faith was made complete by what he did*. [23] And the scripture was fulfilled that says, "Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness," and he was called God's friend. [24] You see that *a person is justified by what he does and not by faith alone*.

We are justified simply upon faith, but it must be a real faith. "We are justified by faith without

works, but we are not justified by a faith that is without works." The faith which God sees and upon which He justifies, leads *inevitably* to works which man can see. God saw the faith of Abraham and counted it to him for righteousness, but the faith God saw was real and *led Abraham to works* that all could see and which proved his faith. The proof to us of the faith is the works, and we know that he who does not do works does not have *the type of faith which justifies*.

We must not lose sight of the truth which Paul emphasizes against legalism on the one side -- that we are justified on the simple condition of a real faith in Christ. We must not lose sight of the truth which James emphasizes against antinomianism on the other side -- that it is only the faith that proves its genuineness by works that justifies. To the legalist, who is seeking to *do* something to merit justification, we must say "stop working and believe in Him who justifies the ungodly. (**Romans 4:5**) To the antinomian, who is boasting that he has faith and is justified by it, but who does not show his faith by his works, we must say "what does it profit, if a man *says* he has faith, but does not have works? Can *that* faith save him? (**James 2:14**) We are justified by faith alone, but we are only justified by that faith which manifests itself by works.

**Reviser's Note:** The relationship among faith, works, and justification is a subject of significant debate among Christian theologians. It also has a very practical effect on Christians: persons who stress faith in the purely abstract sense and have no good works as fruits of their faith will *not* be saved. Conversely, those who do good works to "earn" their way into Heaven *also* will not be saved, because they do not have faith in the atoning value of Christ's sacrifice.

340.020.072 Torrey: no

**POINT 72: The children of God are recognized by the fruit they bear.**

**Matthew 7:17, 19-20** [17] Likewise *every good tree bears good fruit*, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. [19] Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. [20] Thus, by their fruit you will recognize them.

The foregoing excerpt is somewhat out of context -- the full section explains how to distinguish false prophets from true prophets. Nevertheless, it is equally applicable to the point that God expects believers to *do* things.

340.020.074 Torrey: no

**POINT 74: Only those who do the will of the Father will enter the kingdom of heaven. "Do" requires action; mere "belief" is passive.**

**Matthew 7:21** Not everyone who says to me, "Lord, Lord," will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only *he who does the will of my Father* who is in heaven.

340.020.076 Torrey: no

**POINT 76: The wise man puts into practice the words of Jesus. "Put into practice" requires action.**

**Matthew 7:17-** [24] Therefore everyone who hears these words of mine *and puts them into practice* is like a wise man who built his house on the rock. [25] The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house; yet it did not fall, because it had its foundation on the rock. [26] But everyone who hears these words of mine and does not put them into practice is like a foolish man who built his house on sand. [27] The rain came down, the streams rose, and the winds blew and beat against that house, and it fell with a great crash.

340.020.080 Torrey: p319, T:II, P:8

**POINT 80: Jesus was raised because of our justification.**

**Romans 4:25** He was delivered over to death for our sins and was raised to life for our justification.

This does not mean that we were justified by the Resurrection. We were already justified by His death. Because we were thus reckoned righteous, God raised Jesus from the dead. The Resurrection is the proof that God has accepted the sacrifice for us which He made. Jesus rose as our representative. In raising Him, God declared Him accepted and us accepted in Him.

340.020.090 Torrey: p320, T:II, P:9

**POINT 90: We are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Spirit of our God -- i.e., on the ground of what Jesus is and did, and on the condition of our union with Him, and also on the condition of our union with the Spirit of God.**

**1 Corinthians 6:11** And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

340.030.000 Torrey: p320, T:III

**Topic 30: The Extent of Justification.**

340.030.010 Torrey: p320, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: In Christ everyone who believes is justified from all things.**

**Acts 13:39** Through him everyone who believes is justified from everything you could not be justified from by the law of Moses.

The whole account against the believer is wiped out.

God has absolutely nothing which He reckons against the believer in Jesus Christ.

**Romans 8:1** Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus,

**Romans 8:1, 33-34** [33] Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God who justifies. [34] Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died -- more than that, who was raised to life -- is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us.

340.030.020 Torrey: p320, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: The believer is made the righteousness of God in Christ. He has a righteousness not of his own, but a "righteousness which is of God upon faith."**

**2 Corinthians 5:21** God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God.

**Philippians 3:8-9** [8] What is more, I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ [9] and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ -- the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith.

**Romans 3:21-22** [21] But now a righteousness from God, apart from law, has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. [22] This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference,

There has been an absolute interchange of positions between Christ and the justified believer. Christ took our place, the place of the curse.

**Galatians 3:13** Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree."

Jesus was made sin. (**2 Corinthians 5:21**) God reckoned Him a sinner and dealt with Him as a sinner. **Isaiah 53:6** We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.

And when we are justified we step into His place -- the place of acceptance. We are made the righteousness of God in Him.

To be justified is more than to be forgiven. Forgiveness is negative, the putting away of sin. Justification is positive, the reckoning of positive and perfect righteousness to one. Jesus Christ is so united to the believer that God reckons our sins to Him. The believer is so united to Christ that God reckons His righteousness to us. God sees us in Him and reckons us as righteous as He is. When Christ's work in us is completed we will be in actual fact what we are already in God's reckoning.

**1 John 3:2** Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

But our present standing before God is absolutely perfect, though our present state may be far below this.

**John 17:23** I in them and you in me. May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me.

"Near, so very near to God,  
Nearer I cannot be.  
For in the person of His Son  
I'm just as near as He.

"Dear, so very dear to God,  
Dearer, I cannot be;  
For in the person of His Son  
I'm just as dear as He."

340.040.000     Torrey: p321, T:IV  
**Topic 40: The Time of Justification.**

340.040.010     Torrey: p322, T:IV, P:1  
**POINT 10: In Christ every believer is justified from all things.**

**Acts 13:39** Through him everyone who believes is justified from everything you could not be justified from by the law of Moses.



The moment a man believes in Christ, that moment he becomes united to Christ, and God reckons the righteousness of God to Him.

340.050.000      Torrey: p322, T:V

**Topic 50: The Results of Justification.**

340.050.010      Torrey: p322, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Romans 5:1** Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ,

The enmity between the sinner and God is put away by the cross.

**Ephesians 2:14-17** [14] For he himself is our peace, who has made the two one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility, [15] by abolishing in his flesh the law with its commandments and regulations. His purpose was to create in himself one new man out of the two, thus making peace, [16] and in this one body to reconcile both of them to God through the cross, by which he put to death their hostility. [17] He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near.

**Colossians 1:19-20** [19] For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him, [20] and through him to reconcile to himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross.

The moment the sinner believes in Christ is justified and has peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. He may not yet know he has "peace with God," and so will not have "the peace of God." "Peace with God" has to do with our standing; "the peace of God" has to do with our state.

340.050.020      Torrey: p322, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: No one can lay anything to the charge of the justified man. It is God, the great Judge, who justifies; no one can condemn.**

**Romans 8:33-34** [33] Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God who justifies. [34] Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died -- more than that, who was raised to life -- is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us.

**Romans 8:1** Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus,

The believer in Christ is made secure against all condemnation by the death, resurrection, ascension and intercession of Christ. When the death of Christ ceases to satisfy God regarding sin, and when the intercession of Christ ceases to prevail with God, then the justified man can be condemned and not till then.

340.050.030      Torrey: p322, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Being justified by God's grace, we are made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.**

**Titus 3:5-7** [5] he saved us, ... [7] so that, having been justified by his grace, we might become heirs having the hope of eternal life.

340.050.040     Torrey: p323, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: Being justified in Christ's blood we shall be saved from the coming wrath of God.**

**Romans 5:9** Since we have now been justified by his blood, how much more shall we be saved from God's wrath through him!

All who are justified through faith in Jesus Christ will have no part in that long-restrained wrath of God that is soon to burst upon an apostate world.

**John 5:24** I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life.

Judgment regarding sin is past for the believer. His sin has been already judged and punished in the death of Christ.

**1 Peter 2:24** He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree, so that we might die to sins and live for righteousness; by his wounds you have been healed.

**Galatians 3:13** Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree."

The only judgment that awaits the believer is a judgment for rewards according as his works have been good or worthless.

**2 Corinthians 5:10** For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad.

**1 Corinthians 3:11-15** [11] For no one can lay any foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ. [12] If any man builds on this foundation using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay or straw, [13] his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. [14] If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. [15] If it is burned up, he will suffer loss; he himself will be saved, but only as one escaping through the flames.

340.050.050     Torrey: p323, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: The one God justifies He will also glorify. God has already glorified in His own thought and purpose those whom He has justified.**

**Romans 8:30** And those he predestined, he also called; those he called, he also justified; those he justified, he also glorified.

340.050.060     Torrey: p323, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: Those who are justified shall reign in life through the one, even Jesus Christ.**

**Romans 5:16-17** [16] Again, the gift of God is not like the result of the one man's sin: The judgment followed one sin and brought condemnation, but the gift followed many trespasses and brought justification. [17] For if, by the trespass of the one man, death reigned through that one man, how much more will those who receive God's abundant provision of grace and of the gift of righteousness reign in life through the one man, Jesus Christ.



# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 350

---

350.000.000      Torrey: p324

### THE NEW BIRTH

350.010.000      Torrey: p324, T:I

**Topic 10:** What is the New Birth?

350.010.010      Torrey: p324, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10:** The New Birth is a new creation.

**2 Corinthians 5:17** Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!

**Galatians 6:15** Neither circumcision nor uncircumcision means anything; what counts is a new creation.

350.010.020      Torrey: p324, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20:** The New Birth is a passing out of death into life, the impartation of life to men dead through trespasses and sins.

**1 John 3:14** We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

**Ephesians 2:1, 4-5** [1] As for you, you were dead in your transgressions and sins, [4] But because of his great love for us, God, who is rich in mercy, [5] made us alive with Christ even when we were dead in transgressions -- it is by grace you have been saved.

NOTE 1. -- It is evident that Baptism is not the New Birth. The language used above does not fit baptism. One of the passages give, **Galatians 6:15**, expressly contrasts the New Birth with an outward ceremonial.

The same thing is evident from the following:

**1 Corinthians 4:15** Even though you have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel.

Here Paul tells the saints in Corinth that he had begotten them again. If Baptism were the New Birth

this must mean Paul had baptized them. But Paul says he had not baptized them:

**1 Corinthians 1:14, 17** [14] I am thankful that I did not baptize any of you except Crispus and Gaius, [17] For Christ did not send me to baptize, but to preach the gospel -- not with words of human wisdom, lest the cross of Christ be emptied of its power.

Clearly, the New Birth is not Baptism. This is also clear from the following passage, in which we are told that Simon was "baptized," but that his heart still was not right before God and he still was "full of bitterness and captive to sin." (Note that this Simon was a magician performing in Samaria, not Simon Peter.)

**Acts 8:13-16, 18-21, 23** [13] *Simon* himself *believed and was baptized*. And he followed Philip everywhere, astonished by the great signs and miracles he saw. [14] When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them. [15] When they arrived, they prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit, [16] because *the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon any of them; they had simply been baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus*. [18] When Simon saw that the Spirit was given at the laying on of the apostles' hands, he offered them money [19] and said, "Give me also this ability so that everyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit." [20] Peter answered: "May your money perish with you, because you thought you could buy the gift of God with money! [21] You have no part or share in this ministry, because your heart is not right before God. [23] For I see that you are full of bitterness and captive to sin."

Compare the following two passages:

**Luke 23:43** Jesus answered him, "I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise."

**John 3:3, 5** [3] In reply Jesus declared, "I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again." [5] Jesus answered, "I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit."

QUESTION: If Baptism is not the New Birth, to what does the word water in **John 3:5** refer?

ANSWER: Let us look elsewhere and see what are the agents and instruments by which the work of regeneration is carried out:

**1 Peter 1:23** For you have been born again, not of perishable seed, but of imperishable, through the living and enduring word of God.

**James 1:18** He chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of all he created.

**1 Corinthians 4:15** Even though you have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel.

**Titus 3:5** he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of his mercy. He saved us through the washing of rebirth and renewal by the Holy Spirit,

In these passages we see that regeneration is wrought by the word of God and Spirit of God. We are born again by the word of God and the Spirit of God. Now in **John 3:5** we have the Spirit.

**John 3:5** Jesus answered, "I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit.

Can the "water" be taken to mean "the word" without forcing the language?

Compare **Ephesians 5:25-26** [25] Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her [26] to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word,

It has been said that the Greek word translated "word" here in Ephesians, is a different word from the word translated "word" when the Word of God is spoken of. But see the following:

**1 Peter 1:25** but the word of the Lord stands forever." And this is the word that was preached to you.

Here, the same Greek word that is translated "word" in **Ephesians 5:26** is used twice of "the Word of God," and that, too, in direct connection with regeneration by the Word. See also:

**John 15:3** You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you.

**John 17:17** Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth.

But some may ask why did Jesus not plainly say, without a figure, "Except a man be born of the word and the Spirit"? The answer to this is very simple. The whole passage is highly figurative. The word translated "the Spirit: is itself figurative: means literally "wind" and is without the definite article ("the"). Literally translated the passage would read, "Except any one be begotten out of water and wind." In this the wind symbolizes the vivifying element, the Holy Spirit. (Compare **Ezekiel 37:9-10**.) Naturally, therefore, "the water" symbolizes the cleansing element, the "word." (Compare **John 15:3**.) The passage thus reduced to unfigurative language would read, "Except any man be born of the word of God and the Spirit of God." Thus we would have Jesus teaching the doctrine afterwards taught by Paul and James and Peter. (**1 Corinthians 4:15, Titus 3:5, James 1:18, 1 Peter 1:23**) Another interpretation is suggested. This takes both water and wind as symbols of the Spirit, the one setting forth His cleansing work, the other His quickening work. It matters very little, so far as Bible doctrine is concerned, which interpretation we accept: for whether or not the doctrine that men are begotten again by the Word is found here, It certainly is found elsewhere. (**1 Corinthians 4:15, James 1:18, 1 Peter 1:23**) And, if the cleansing work of the Spirit is not found here, it is found elsewhere. Indeed, whatever work you find attributed to the Holy Spirit in the Bible, you will also find attributed to the Word. This is due to the fact that the Spirit works through the Word. The Word is the Sword of the Spirit. (**Ephesians 6:17**)

If it is still insisted that the water here refers to Baptism, it is still evident that mere water Baptism is not regeneration, for the passage says, "Except a man be born of water *and the Spirit*."

In any case, it is clear that Baptism is not the New Birth.

Note w. -- It is also evident that the New Birth is not a mere outward change of conduct. The language used above does not fit this.

350.010.030 Torrey: p324, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: The New Birth is a making anew of the mind.**

**Romans 12:2** Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is -- his good, pleasing and perfect will.

The word for mind here includes thoughts, feelings and purposes.

350.010.040 Torrey: p324, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: The New Birth is the impartation of a new nature, even God's own nature, to the one who is begotten again.**

**2 Peter 1:4** Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

The natural or unregenerate man is intellectually blind to the truth, "the things of the Spirit" (**1 Corinthians 2:14**), corrupt in his affections (**Galatians 5:19- 21**), perverse in his will (**Romans 8:7**). This is the condition of every unregenerate man, no matter how cultured, refined or outwardly moral he may be. (See the Chapter on the Present Standing before God and the Condition of Men outside of the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ.) In the New Birth God imparts to us His own wise and holy nature, a nature that thinks as God thinks (**Colossians 3:10**), feels as God feels, wills as God wills. (**1 John 3:14; 4:7-8**) "Our things are passed away, behold they are become new." (**2 Corinthians 5:17**) Compare **Ezekiel 36:26-27**

The New Birth is a most desirable and glorious experience. Just to think that the All Holy God comes to men who are sunken in sin, dead through trespasses and sins, the vilest of sinners, blind, corrupt, perverse, and imparts to them His own, holy and glorious nature. The doctrine of the New Birth is one of the most precious and inspiring in the Word of God.

**1 Corinthians 2:14** The man without the Spirit does not accept the things that come from the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually discerned.

**Galatians 5:19-21** [19] The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; [20] idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions [21] and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

**Romans 8:7** [6] The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind controlled by the Spirit is life and peace; [7] the sinful mind is hostile to God. It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so.

**Colossians 3:9-10** [9] Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices [10] and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

**1 John 3:14** We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

**1 John 4:7-8** [7] Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God. [8] Whoever does not love does not know God, because

God is love.

**2 Corinthians 5:17** Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!

**Ezekiel 36:26-27** [26] I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit in you; I will remove from you your heart of stone and give you a heart of flesh. [27] And I will put my Spirit in you and move you to follow my decrees and be careful to keep my laws.

350.020.000      Torrey: p328, T:II

**Topic 20: The Results of the New Birth.**

350.020.010      Torrey: p328, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: The Regenerated Man is a temple of God; the Spirit of God dwells in him.**

**1 Corinthians 3:16** Don't you know that you yourselves are God's temple and that God's Spirit lives in you?

**1 Corinthians 6:19** Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own;

When anyone submits himself to the regenerating work of the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit takes up His abode in Him.

350.020.020      Torrey: p328, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: The Regenerated Man is not in the flesh, but in the Spirit --, i.e., the flesh is not the sphere in which he thinks, feels, lives and acts; on the other hand, the Spirit is the sphere in which he thinks, feels, lives and acts.**

**Romans 8:9** You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ.

NOTE: -- While the regenerated man is not in the flesh, he still has the flesh.

**Galatians 5:16-17** [16] So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. [17] For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want.

The new nature received in regeneration does not expel, destroy nor eradicate the old nature. The two exist side by side. The old nature is present, but its deeds are to be put to death through the Spirit.

**Romans 8:12-13** [12] Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation--but it is not to the sinful nature, to live according to it. [13] For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live,

The flesh is present but we are not under its dominion. It is said by some that **Galatians 5:17** represents a lower experience, but in **Romans 8** we get a higher experience when the carnal nature is eradicated. But in **Romans 8:12- 13** we see the flesh still present but triumphed over.

350.020.030      Torrey: p328, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: The Regenerated Man is made free from the law of sin and death.**

**Romans 8:1-2** [1] Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, [2] because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death.

What the law of sin and death is we see in the following:

**Romans 7:14-24** [14] We know that the law is spiritual; but I am unspiritual, sold as a slave to sin. [15] I do not understand what I do. For what I want to do I do not do, but what I hate I do. [16] And if I do what I do not want to do, I agree that the law is good. [17] As it is, it is no longer I myself who do it, but it is sin living in me. [18] I know that nothing good lives in me, that is, in my sinful nature. For I have the desire to do what is good, but I cannot carry it out. [19] For what I do is not the good I want to do; no, the evil I do not want to do -- this I keep on doing. [20] Now if I do what I do not want to do, it is no longer I who do it, but it is sin living in me that does it. [21] So I find this law at work: When I want to do good, evil is right there with me. [22] For in my inner being I delight in God's law; [23] but I see another law at work in the members of my body, waging war against the law of my mind and making me a prisoner of the law of sin at work within my members. [24] What a wretched man I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death?

After regeneration the law still works, but the higher "law of the Spirit of Life" comes in and sets us free from its power. Whereas in man merely awakened by law, the "law of sin and death" gets a perpetual victory, in the regenerate man the law of "the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus" gets the perpetual victory.

350.020.040 Torrey: p329, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: The Regenerated Man is outwardly transformed by the inward renewing of his mind so that he is no longer fashioned according to this world.**

**Romans 12:2** Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is -- his good, pleasing and perfect will.

NOTE: -- The regenerated man, however, does not at once manifest perfectly that of which he has the germ in himself. He begins as a babe and must grow:

**1 Peter 2:2** Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation,

**Ephesians 4:11-15** [11] It was he who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, [12] to prepare God's people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up [13] until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ. [14] Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming. [15] Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will in all things grow up into him who is the Head, that is, Christ.

The new life must be fed and developed.

350.020.050 Torrey: p329, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: The Regenerated Man is being made anew into the likeness of his Creator in**



**knowledge.**

**Colossians 3:9-10** [9] Do not lie to each other, since you have taken off your old self with its practices [10] and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

This result of the new birth is a progressive process. The mind of the believer is brought day by day into conformity with that of God.

350.020.060      Torrey: p330, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: The Regenerated Man minds the things of the Spirit -- i.e., he directs his mind toward the things of the Spirit; sets his thoughts, affections and purposes upon them.**

**Romans 8:5** Those who live according to the sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires; but those who live in accordance with the Spirit have their minds set on what the Spirit desires.

350.020.070      Torrey: p330, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: The Regenerated Man believes that Jesus is the Christ.**

**1 John 5:1** Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves the father loves his child as well.

Of course the faith that John here speaks of is a faith that is real -- i.e., a faith that enthrones Jesus as Christ in the heart. Compare these two passages:

**Matthew 16:16-17** [16] Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." [17] Jesus replied, "Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah, for this was not revealed to you by man, but by my Father in heaven.

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

350.020.080      Torrey: p330, T:II, P:8

**POINT 80: The Regenerated Man overcomes the world.**

**1 John 5:3-4** [3] This is love for God: to obey his commands. And his commands are not burdensome, [4] for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith.

The world is at variance with God, it lies in the evil one, and it is constantly exercising a power to draw the believer into disobedience to God, but the one born of God by the power of faith gets the victory over the world.

**1 John 5:19** We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one.

350.020.090      Torrey: p330, T:II, P:9

**POINT 90: In the one born of God the seed of God remains, and therefore the one born of God does not practice sin.**

**1 John 3:9** No one who is born of God will continue to sin, because God's seed remains in him; he cannot go on sinning, because he has been born of God.

NOTE 1 -- What is meant here by sin? Sin here is manifestly something done. What kind of a something done is defined in verse 4, "transgression of the law" or "lawlessness," i.e., such acts as reveal disregard for the will of God as revealed in His word. Sin then is here, a conscious intentional violation of the law of God. The regenerate man will not be doing that which he knows to be contrary to the will of God. He may do that which is contrary to God's will, but which he does not know to be contrary to God's will. It is not therefore lawlessness. Perhaps he ought to have known that it was contrary to God's will, and when he is led to see it he will confess his guilt to God. Taking sin in a broader sense than John here takes it, it is sin.

NOTE 2 -- The tense of the verb here used is the present, which denotes progressive or continued action. The literal translation of the passage would be "Every one begotten out of God, sin is not doing, because his seed in him is remaining; and he cannot be sinning, because out of God he is begotten." It is not taught that he never sins in a single act, but it is taught that he is not going on sinning, making a practice of sin. What his practice is will appear under the next heading.

The one begotten of God cannot be sinning, because he is begotten of God. The new nature imparted in regeneration renders the continuous practice of sin impossible.

350.020.100      Torrey: p331, T:II, P:10

**POINT 100: He that is begotten of God practices righteousness.**

**1 John 2:29** If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone who practices righteousness is born of Him.

Here again we have a continuous action. The thought is not that he does righteousness in a single case, but that he makes a practice of it. By righteousness is meant the performance of such acts as are conformed to the straight line of God's will revealed in His word. Righteousness is the habitual practice of the one who is begotten of God. He may do individual acts which are unrighteous, but he is a doer of righteousness; "righteousness" is his practice.

NOTE -- The force of the present tense as indicating continuous action is very evident in this verse. If we took it as referring to a single act the verse would teach that everyone who does a single righteous act is begotten of God. Of course this is not meant. It does not refer to a single act of righteousness, and evidently the contrasted passage (Chapter 3:9) cannot refer to a single act of lawlessness.

350.020.110      Torrey: p332, T:II, P:11

**POINT 110: He that is begotten of God loves the brethren.**

**1 John 3:14** We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

**1 John 4:7** Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God.

QUESTION: Who are meant by the brethren?

ANSWER: **1 John 5:1** Everyone who believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and



everyone who loves the father loves his child as well.

Those who are begotten of God. The one who is begotten of God loves every other one who is begotten of God. The other may be of any nationality, race, or heritage; he may be educated or uneducated, but he is a child of God and a brother, and as such an object of love.

QUESTION: What is meant by love?

ANSWER: The following verses define what John means by love. It is not mere emotion or sentiment, but that genuine desire for another's good that leads to sacrifice for him -- even the sacrifice of our own life if necessary. This love is the supreme result, evidence and test of the New Birth.

350.020.120     Torrey: p332, T:II, P:12

**POINT 120: In the Regenerated Man old things are passed away; they become new.**

**2 Corinthians 5:17** Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!

In the place of the old ideas, old affections, old purposes, old choices, are new ideas, new affections, new purposes, new choices.

350.020.130     Torrey: p332, T:II, P:13

**POINT 130: Through the bath of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit the regenerated man is already saved.**

**Titus 3:4-7** [4] But when the kindness and love of God our Savior appeared, [5] he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of his mercy. He saved us through the washing of rebirth and renewal by the Holy Spirit, [6] whom he poured out on us generously through Jesus Christ our Savior, [7] so that, having been justified by his grace, we might become heirs having the hope of eternal life.

GENERAL NOTE. -- These results of regeneration are also its evidence and tests, especially verses 7-11. If anyone would know whether he has indeed been begotten again let him inquire, "Are the facts stated under verses 7-11 true of me?"

350.030.000     Torrey: p333, T:III

**Topic 30: The Necessity of the New Birth.**

350.030.010     Torrey: p333, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: No man can see the Kingdom of God except he be born again. The necessity is universal.**

**John 3:3** In reply Jesus declared, "I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again."

350.030.020     Torrey: p333, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: Men not only may but must be born again. The necessity is absolute and imperative.**

**John 3:7** You should not be surprised at my saying, 'You must be born again.'

Nothing else will take the place of the New Birth. Education, morality, religion, orthodoxy, baptism, reform -- none of these nor all of them together are sufficient.

**Galatians 6:15** Neither circumcision nor uncircumcision means anything; what counts is a new creation.

350.030.030 Torrey: p333, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: The reason why men must be born again is because all one gets by natural generation is "flesh."**

**John 3:5-6** [5] Jesus answered, "I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. [6] Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit.

What the character of the flesh is we learn from Paul:

**Galatians 5:19-21** [19] The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; [20] idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions [21] and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

**Romans 8:7-8** [7] the sinful mind is hostile to God. It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so. [8] Those controlled by the sinful nature cannot please God.

"The flesh" is radically and essentially bad. They that are in the flesh "cannot please God," nor "inherit the kingdom of God." The flesh is incapable of improvement.

**Jeremiah 13:23** Can the Ethiopian change his skin or the leopard its spots? Neither can you do good who are accustomed to doing evil.

What man needs is not to cultivate nor to improve the old nature, but to get a new one.

**Matthew 12:33** Make a tree good and its fruit will be good, or make a tree bad and its fruit will be bad, for a tree is recognized by its fruit.

350.040.000 Torrey: p334, T:IV

**Topic 40: The Manner of the New Birth, or How Men are Born Again.**

350.040.010 Torrey: p334, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: Believers are begotten again -- not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of men, but of God. The New Birth is God's work, having its origin entirely in God's will.**

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

350.040.020 Torrey: p334, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: God begets men anew through the cleansing, quickening, renewing work of the Holy Spirit.**

**Titus 3:4-5** [4] But when the kindness and love of God our Savior appeared, [5] he saved us, not because of righteous things we had done, but because of his mercy. He saved us through the washing of rebirth and renewal by the Holy Spirit,

**John 3:5-6:** [5] Jesus answered, "I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. [6] Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit."

350.040.030 Torrey: p334, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: "The word of Truth" or "The word of God" -- (i.e., the word which is preached by the gospel) -- is the instrument the Holy Spirit uses in regeneration.**

**James 1:18** He chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of all he created.

Compare: **Colossians 1:5** the faith and love that spring from the hope that is stored up for you in heaven and that you have already heard about in the word of truth, the gospel

**1 Peter 1:23, 25** [23] For you have been born again, not of perishable seed, but of imperishable, through the living and enduring word of God. [24] For, "All men are like grass, and all their glory is like the flowers of the field; the grass withers and the flowers fall, [25] but the word of the Lord stands forever." And this is the word that was preached to you.

350.040.040 Torrey: p334, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: Men, by the preaching of the gospel, are used of God for the regeneration of believers.**

**1 Corinthians 4:15** Even though you have ten thousand guardians in Christ, you do not have many fathers, for in Christ Jesus I became your father through the gospel.

350.040.050 Torrey: p335, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: We become children of God through believing in or receiving Jesus Christ.**

**Galatians 3:26** You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus,

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

This same thought is illustrated by Jesus in **John 3:14-15** by a reference to the brazen serpent.

**John 3:14-15** [14] Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert, so the Son of Man must be lifted up, [15] that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life.

These words are an answer to the question of Nicodemus "How can these things be?" (verse 9) As the dying Israelite, with the poison of the fiery serpents coursing through his veins, was saved by looking at the brazen serpent on the pole, and had new life coursing through his veins as soon as he looked, so we dying men, with the poison of sin coursing through our veins, are saved by looking at Christ "made in the likeness of sinful flesh," lifted up on the cross, and have new life coursing through our veins as soon as we look. All we have to do with our regeneration is to receive Christ.

**2 Corinthians 5:17** Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!

In the New Birth the Word of God is the seed; the human heart is the soil; the preacher of the Word is the sower, and drops the seed into the soil; God by His Spirit opens the heart to receive the seed (**Acts 16:14**); the hearer believes; the Spirit quickens the seed into life in the receptive heart; the new Divine Nature springs up out of the Divine Word; the believer is born again, created anew, made alive, passed out of death into life.

**Acts 16:14** One of those listening was a woman named Lydia, a dealer in purple cloth from the city of Thyatira, who was a worshiper of God. The Lord opened her heart to respond to Paul's message.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 360

---

360.000.000     Torrey: p336

### GOD'S ADOPTION OF BELIEVERS

360.010.000     Torrey: p336, T:I

**Topic 10:** What is Adoption?

360.010.010     Torrey: p336, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10:** Derivation of the word.

The derivation of the word "adoption" means "the placing of a son."

360.010.020     Torrey: p336, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20:** Greek usage outside the Bible.

In Greek usage outside the Bible from Pindar and Herodotus down, the two words from which the word translated "adoption" is derived mean "an adopted son."

360.010.030     Torrey: p336, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30:** Scriptural usage.

**Romans 9:3-4** [3] For I could wish that I myself were cursed and cut off from Christ for the sake of my brothers, those of my own race, [4] the people of Israel. Theirs is the adoption as sons; theirs the divine glory, the covenants, the receiving of the law, the temple worship and the promises.

**Exodus 4:22-23** [22] Then say to Pharaoh, 'This is what the LORD says: Israel is my firstborn son, [23] and I told you, "Let my son go, so he may worship me." But you refused to let him go; so I will kill your firstborn son.'

**Deuteronomy 14:1-2** [1] You are the children of the LORD your God. Do not cut yourselves or shave the front of your heads for the dead, [2] for you are a people holy to the LORD your God. Out of all the peoples on the face of the earth, the LORD has chosen you to be his treasured possession.

**Isaiah 43:6-2** [6] I will say to the north, 'Give them up!' and to the south, 'Do not hold them back.' Bring my sons from afar and my daughters from the ends of the earth -- [7] everyone who is called by my name, whom I created for my glory, whom I formed and made."

**Jeremiah 31:9** They will come with weeping; they will pray as I bring them back. I will lead them beside streams of water on a level path where they will not stumble, because I am Israel's father, and Ephraim is my firstborn son.

**Hosea 11:1** When Israel was a child, I loved him, and out of Egypt I called my son.

**Romans 8:12, 23** [12] Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation -- but it is not to the sinful nature, to live according to it. [23] Not only so, but we ourselves, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies.

**Ephesians 1:4-6** [4] For he chose us in him before the creation of the world to be holy and blameless in his sight. In love [5] he predestined us to be adopted as his sons through Jesus Christ, in accordance with his pleasure and will -- [6] to the praise of his glorious grace, which he has freely given us in the One he loves.

**Galatians 4:4-5** [4] But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law, [5] to redeem those under law, that we might receive the full rights of sons.

These are all the passages in which the word is found. Here the word means the "placing" or "adoption" as sons. In regeneration we receive the *nature* of sons of God; in adoption we receive the *position* of sons of God. Regeneration is a change of nature. Adoption is a change of position or relation.

360.020.000      Torrey: p336, T:II

**Topic 20: The Origin and Ground of Adoption**

360.020.010      Torrey: p337, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Adoption originates in God's grace.**

**Ephesians 1:3-6** [3] Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in the heavenly realms with every spiritual blessing in Christ. [4] For he chose us in him before the creation of the world to be holy and blameless in his sight. In love [5] he predestined us to be adopted as his sons through Jesus Christ, in accordance with his pleasure and will -- [6] to the praise of his glorious grace, which he has freely given us in the One he loves.

Adoption originates in the eternal, sovereign, unmerited grace of God. Not because of any merit seen or foreseen in us, but because of His own loving, gracious choice, He foreordained us to adoption as sons. He did not foreordain us to adoption as sons because we were fit for the place; but, having foreordained us to adoption as sons, He makes us fit for the place to which He has graciously foreordained us.

360.020.020      Torrey: p337, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Adoption is through Jesus Christ.**

Adoption is through Jesus Christ -- i.e., on the ground of what He is and does. Because of what His only begotten Son is and does, He adopts many to be sons.

360.030.000      Torrey: p337, T:III

**Topic 30: The Recipients of Adoption, or who receive the Grace of Adoption.**

330.010.010     Torrey: p337, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: All those who believe in, or receive Christ Jesus, receive the adoption of sons -- i.e., they obtain a place or right as sons in the family of God.**

**Galatians 3:25-27** [25] Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law. [26] You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, [27] for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.

**Galatians 4:4-7** [4] But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law, [5] to redeem those under law, that we might receive the full rights of sons. [6] Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father." [7] So you are no longer a slave, but a son; and since you are a son, God has made you also an heir.

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

360.040.000     Torrey: p337, T:IV

**Topic 40: The Time of Adoption, or when the Believer receives his place as a Son.**

360.040.010     Torrey: p338, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: The Believer has already received his place as a son in the family of God.**

**Galatians 3:25-27** [25] Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law. [26] You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, [27] for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.

**Galatians 4:6** Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

**1 John 3:1-2** [1] How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! And that is what we are! The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him. [2] Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

We now have the rights of sons; we are not under tutors, governors nor law. All things in the house are ours.

360.040.020     Torrey: p338, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: The full working out and manifestation of our position as sons -- the completion of our placing as sons, our manifestation to the world as sons of God -- lies in the future, and will not be realized until the body as well as the Spirit is redeemed.**

**Romans 8:23** Not only so, but we ourselves, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies.

**Colossians 3:4** When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

360.050.000     Torrey: p338, T:V



Topic 50: The Proof of our Adoption, or How we know that we have the Place of Sons in the Family of God.

360.050.010 Torrey: p338, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: We know by the explicit statement of God's Word that we are no longer under the tutor, law, but have a place as sons in the family of God.**

**Galatians 3:23-27** [23] Before this faith came, we were held prisoners by the law, locked up until faith should be revealed. [24] So the law was put in charge to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith. [25] Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law. [26] You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, [27] for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.

360.050.020 Torrey: p338 T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: Because we are sons, God has sent the Spirit of His Son into our hearts. This Spirit of Christ bears witness together with our spirit that we are children of God, crying "Abba, Father."**

**Galatians 4:6** Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

**Romans 8:15-16** [15] For you did not receive a spirit that makes you a slave again to fear, but you received the Spirit of sonship. And by him we cry, "Abba, Father." [16] The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children.

360.060.000 Torrey: p338, T:VI

**Topic 60: The Results of Adoption.**

360.060.010 Torrey: p339, T:VI, P:1

**POINT 10: God sends the Spirit of His sons into our hearts, crying "Abba, Father."**

**Galatians 4:6** Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

360.060.020 Torrey: p339, T:VI, P:2

**POINT 20: We are delivered from bondage and fear, and brought into filial trust in God.**

**Romans 8:15** For you did not receive a spirit that makes you a slave again to fear, but you received the Spirit of sonship. And by him we cry, "Abba, Father."

360.060.030 Torrey: p339, T:VI, P:3

**POINT 30: We are delivered from the bondage under the law to serve in the liberty of sons.**

**Galatians 4:4-6** [4] But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law, [5] to redeem those under law, that we might receive the full rights of sons. [6] Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

**Galatians 3:25-27** [25] Now that faith has come, we are no longer under the supervision of the law. [26] You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus, [27] for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ.



360.060.040      Torrey: p339, T:VI, P:4

**POINT 40: Having received a place as children we are made heirs of god and joint heirs with Jesus Christ. We are made heirs of all God is and all God has.**

**Romans 8:17** Now if we are children, then we are heirs -- heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 370

---

370.000.000      Torrey: p340

### THE SANCTIFICATION OF BELIEVERS

370.010.000      Torrey: p340, T:1

Topic 10: What does Sanctification mean?

370.010.010      Torrey: p340, T:1, P:1

**POINT 10:** To sanctify means to separate or set apart for God. Sanctification is the process of setting apart or state of being set apart for God. This is the primary meaning of the word.

**Leviticus 27:14, 16** [14] If a man dedicates his house as something holy to the LORD, the priest will judge its quality as good or bad. Whatever value the priest then sets, so it will remain. [16] If a man dedicates to the LORD part of his family land, its value is to be set according to the amount of seed required for it -- fifty shekels of silver to a homer of barley seed.

**Numbers 8:17** Every firstborn male in Israel, whether man or animal, is mine. When I struck down all the firstborn in Egypt, I set them apart for myself.

**2 Chronicles 7:16** I have chosen and consecrated this temple so that my Name may be there forever. My eyes and my heart will always be there.

**Jeremiah 1:5** Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart; I appointed you as a prophet to the nations.

**Matthew 23:17** You blind fools! Which is greater: the gold, or the temple that makes the gold sacred?

**John 10:35-36** [35] If he called them 'gods,' to whom the word of God came -- and the Scripture cannot be broken -- [36] what about the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, 'I am God's Son'?

370.010.020      Torrey: p341, T:1, P:2

**POINT 20:** To sanctify means to separate from ceremonial or moral defilement, to cleanse. Sanctification is the process of separating, or state of being separated, from ceremonial or moral

## defilement.

**2 Chronicles 29:4-5, 15- 18** [4] He brought in the priests and the Levites, assembled them in the square on the east side [5] and said: "Listen to me, Levites! Consecrate yourselves now and consecrate the temple of the LORD, the God of your fathers. Remove all defilement from the sanctuary. [15] When they had assembled their brothers and consecrated themselves, they went in to purify the temple of the LORD, as the king had ordered, following the word of the LORD. [16] The priests went into the sanctuary of the LORD to purify it. They brought out to the courtyard of the LORD's temple everything unclean that they found in the temple of the LORD. The Levites took it and carried it out to the Kidron Valley. [17] They began the consecration on the first day of the first month, and by the eighth day of the month they reached the portico of the LORD. For eight more days they consecrated the temple of the LORD itself, finishing on the sixteenth day of the first month. [18] Then they went in to King Hezekiah and reported: "We have purified the entire temple of the LORD, the altar of burnt offering with all its utensils, and the table for setting out the consecrated bread, with all its articles.

**Leviticus 11:44** I am the LORD your God; consecrate yourselves and be holy, because I am holy. Do not make yourselves unclean by any creature that moves about on the ground.

**Leviticus 20:7** Consecrate yourselves and be holy, because I am the LORD your God.

**1 Chronicles 15:12, 14** [12] He said to them, "You are the heads of the Levitical families; you and your fellow Levites are to consecrate yourselves and bring up the ark of the LORD, the God of Israel, to the place I have prepared for it." [14] So the priests and Levites consecrated themselves in order to bring up the ark of the LORD, the God of Israel.

**Exodus 19:20-22** [20] The LORD descended to the top of Mount Sinai and called Moses to the top of the mountain. So Moses went up [21] and the LORD said to him, "Go down and warn the people so they do not force their way through to see the LORD and many of them perish. [22] Even the priests, who approach the LORD, must consecrate themselves, or the LORD will break out against them."

**1 Thessalonians 5:22- 23** [22] Avoid every kind of evil. [23] May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Hebrews 9:13** The blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of a heifer sprinkled on those who are ceremonially unclean sanctify them so that they are outwardly clean.

**1 Thessalonians 4:7** For God did not call us to be impure, but to live a holy life.

**1 Thessalonians 4:3** It is God's will that you should be sanctified: that you should avoid sexual immorality;

The two meanings of the word are closely allied. One cannot be truly separated to God without being separated from sin.

370.010.030      Torrey: p342, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: God is spoken of as being sanctified by the revelation of His own character, not that He is made holy but shown to be Holy.**

**Ezekiel 20:41** I will accept you as fragrant incense when I bring you out from the nations and gather you from the countries where you have been scattered, and I will show myself holy among you in the sight of the nations.

**Ezekiel 28:22** and say: "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: 'I am against you, O Sidon, and I will gain glory within you. They will know that I am the LORD, when I inflict punishment on her and show myself holy within her.'"

**Ezekiel 36:23** I will show the holiness of my great name, which has been profaned among the nations, the name you have profaned among them. Then the nations will know that I am the LORD, declares the Sovereign LORD, when I show myself holy through you before their eyes.

**Ezekiel 38:16** You will advance against my people Israel like a cloud that covers the land. In days to come, O Gog, I will bring you against my land, so that the nations may know me when I show myself holy through you before their eyes.

**Ezekiel 39:27** When I have brought them back from the nations and have gathered them from the countries of their enemies, I will show myself holy through them in the sight of many nations.

370.020.000      Torrey: p342, T:II

**Topic 20: How are men sanctified?**

370.020.010      Torrey: p342, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: God sanctifies men.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23** May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**John 17:17** Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth.

Sanctification -- the separation of men from sin and separating them unto God -- is God's own work.

As it was God who in the Old Dispensation set apart the firstborn unto Himself, so it is God who in the New Dispensation sets apart the believer unto Himself and separates him from sin.

370.020.020      Torrey: p342, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Christ sanctifies the Church. Sanctification is Christ's work.**

**Ephesians 5:25-26** [25] Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her [26] to make her holy, cleansing her by the washing with water through the word,

By the giving up or sacrifice of Himself, Christ sets the Church apart for God. The sacrifice of Christ puts a difference between the Church and the world, just as the blood of the Passover Lamb put a difference between Israel and the Egyptians.

**Exodus 11:7** But among the Israelites not a dog will bark at any man or animal.' Then you will know that the LORD makes a distinction between Egypt and Israel.

**Exodus 12:12-13** [12] On that same night I will pass through Egypt and strike down every firstborn -- both men and animals -- and I will bring judgment on all the gods of Egypt. I am the

LORD. [13] The blood will be a sign for you on the houses where you are; and when I see the blood, I will pass over you. No destructive plague will touch you when I strike Egypt.

**Hebrews 10:10** And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

By the offering of His own body Jesus Christ has forever set the believer apart from God. The cross stands between the believer and the world. He belongs to God.

370.020.030      Torrey: p343, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: The Holy Spirit sanctifies the believer. Sanctification is the Holy Spirit's work.**

**2 Thessalonians 2:13** But we ought always to thank God for you, brothers loved by the Lord, because from the beginning God chose you to be saved through the sanctifying work of the Spirit and through belief in the truth.

**1 Peter 1:1-2** [1] ... To God's elect, ... [2] who have been chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctifying work of the Spirit, for obedience to Jesus Christ and sprinkling by his blood: Grace and peace be yours in abundance.

Just as in the Old Testament type, tabernacle, altar and priest were set apart for God by the anointing oil, so in the New Testament anti-type the believer, who is both tabernacle and priest, is set apart for God by the anointing of the Holy Spirit. It is also the Holy Spirit's working in the heart that overcomes the flesh and its defilements, and thus separates the believer from sin and clothes him with Divine graces of character, and makes him fit to be God's own.

**Leviticus 8:10-12** [10] Then Moses took the anointing oil and anointed the tabernacle and everything in it, and so consecrated them. [11] He sprinkled some of the oil on the altar seven times, anointing the altar and all its utensils and the basin with its stand, to consecrate them. [12] He poured some of the anointing oil on Aaron's head and anointed him to consecrate him.

**Galatians 5:16-23** [16] So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the sinful nature. [17] For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want. [18] But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law. [19] The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; [20] idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions [21] and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God. [22] But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, [23] gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law.

370.020.040      Torrey: p344, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Believers are sanctified through the blood.**

**Hebrews 13:12** And so Jesus also suffered outside the city gate to make the people holy through his own blood.

The blood cleanses us from *all the guilt* of sin and thus separates us from the mass of men under the curse of the law and sets us apart for God. Compare:

**1 John 1:7, 9** [7] But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship with one

another, and the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin. [9] If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

In the Old Testament the blood of the sacrifice cleansed the Israelites from the guilt of ceremonial offenses and set them apart for God; in the New Testament the blood of Christ cleanses the believer from *guilt* of moral offenses and sets him apart for God.

370.020.050      Torrey: p344, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: We are sanctified in the truth, the Word of God.**

**John 17:17** Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth.

The Word cleanses from the presence of sin, separates us from it, and sets us apart for God.

**Psalms 119:9, 11** [9] How can a young man keep his way pure? By living according to your word. [11] I have hidden your word in my heart that I might not sin against you.

**John 15:3** You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you.

As we bring our lives into daily contact with the Word, the sins and imperfections of our lives and hearts are disclosed and put away, and we are more and more separated from sin unto God.

**John 13:10** Jesus answered, "A person who has had a bath needs only to wash his feet; his whole body is clean. And you are clean, though not every one of you."

370.020.060      Torrey: p344, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: Jesus Christ became for us a righteousness from God.**

**1 Corinthians 1:30** It is because of him that you are in Christ Jesus, who has become for us wisdom from God -- that is, our righteousness, holiness and redemption.

Separation from sin and separation to God was provided for us in Christ. By the appropriation of Christ we obtain this sanctification thus provided. The more completely we appropriate Christ, the more completely are we sanctified. But perfect sanctification is provided in Him, just as perfect wisdom is provided in Him.

**Colossians 2:2-3** [2] My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding, in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ, [3] in whom are hidden all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

We appropriate each in ever-increasing measure. Through the indwelling Christ, presented to us by the Spirit in the Word, we are made Christ-like and bear fruit.

**John 15:1-7** [1] I am the true vine, and my Father is the gardener. [2] He cuts off every branch in me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit he prunes so that it will be even more fruitful. [3] You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you. [4] Remain in me, and I will remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me. [5] I am the vine; you are the branches. If a man remains in me and I in him, he will bear much fruit; apart from me you can do nothing. [6] If anyone does not remain in me, he is like a branch that is thrown away and withers; such branches are picked up, thrown into the fire and burned. [7] If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you.

As Christ takes continually more and more complete possession of every corner of our being we are more and more completely sanctified.

370.020.070     Torrey: p345, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: We become partakers of God's holiness through the administration of chastisement by our Heavenly Father.**

**Hebrews 12:10-11, 14** [10] Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his holiness. [11] No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it. [14] Make every effort to live in peace with all men and to be holy; without holiness no one will see the Lord.

NOTE -- The word "holiness" in this passage is not precisely the same word as the one translated "sanctification" in other passages, but it is from precisely the same root, and in v. 14, precisely the same word is used, and it is translated "sanctification" in the Revised Version.

370.020.080     Torrey: p345, T:II, P:8

**POINT 80: Sanctification is something that we must pursue, or seek earnestly, if we are to obtain it. While it is God's work we have our part in it; viz: to make it the object of our earnest desire and pursuit.**

**Hebrews 12:14** Make every effort to live in peace with all men and to be holy; without holiness no one will see the Lord.

370.020.090     Torrey: p346, T:II, P:9

**POINT 90: We attain unto sanctification through presenting our members as servants (literally "slaves") to righteousness and becoming ourselves bondservants unto God.**

**Romans 6:19, 22** [19] I put this in human terms because you are weak in your natural selves. Just as you used to offer the parts of your body in slavery to impurity and to ever-increasing wickedness, so now offer them in slavery to righteousness leading to holiness. [22] But now that you have been set free from sin and have become slaves to God, the benefit you reap leads to holiness, and the result is eternal life.

370.020.100     Torrey: p346, T:II, P:10

**POINT 100: We perfect holiness by cleansing ourselves from all defilement of flesh and spirit. To this end we are to come out from among unbelievers, refusing all alliances with them and touching no unclean thing.**

**2 Corinthians 6:17** "Therefore come out from them and be separate, says the Lord. Touch no unclean thing, and I will receive you."

**2 Corinthians 7:1** Since we have these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that contaminates body and spirit, perfecting holiness out of reverence for God.

It is, of course, under the guidance and in the power of the Holy Spirit that we do this, but it is *we* that do it.

370.020.110     Torrey: p346, T:II, P:11

**POINT 110: The completion by Christ of the work of sanctification in us -- i.e., our presentation**



**before God, holy, without blemish and unproveable -- is conditioned upon our continuance in the faith, grounded and steadfast.**

**Colossians 1:21-23** [21] Once you were alienated from God and were enemies in your minds because of your evil behavior. [22] But now he has reconciled you by Christ's physical body through death to present you holy in his sight, without blemish and free from accusation -- [23] if you continue in your faith, established and firm, not moved from the hope held out in the gospel. This is the gospel that you heard and that has been proclaimed to every creature under heaven, and of which I, Paul, have become a servant.

NOTE -- If we have a genuine faith we will so continue.

**Hebrews 10:39** But we are not of those who shrink back and are destroyed, but of those who believe and are saved.

370.020.120 Torrey: p346, T:II, P:12

**POINT 120: We are sanctified by faith in Christ.**

**Acts 26:17-18** [17] I will rescue you from your own people and from the Gentiles. I am sending you to them [18] to open their eyes and turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me.

Sanctification, just as Justification, Regeneration and Adoption, is conditioned upon faith. Faith is the hand that appropriates this as all other blessings of God.

370.030.000 Torrey: p347, T:III

**Topic 30: When does Sanctification take Place?**

370.030.010 Torrey: p347, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: All members of the Church of God already are sanctified in Jesus Christ.**

**1 Corinthians 1:2** To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus and called to be holy, together with all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ -- their Lord and ours:

**1 Corinthians 6:11** And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

The moment anyone becomes a member of the Church of God by faith in Jesus Christ, that moment he is sanctified.

QUESTION: In what sense are we already sanctified?

ANSWER: **Hebrews 10:10, 13-14** [10] And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. [13] Since that time he waits for his enemies to be made his footstool, [14] because by one sacrifice he has made perfect forever those who are being made holy.

By the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all we are cleansed forever from all the guilt of sin, we are "perfected forever" as far as our standing before God is concerned. The sacrifice does not need to be repeated as the Jewish sacrifices did. The work is done once for all, sin is put away forever,

and we are set apart forever as God's peculiar and eternal possession.

**Hebrews 9:26** Then Christ would have had to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But now he has appeared once for all at the end of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself.

**Galatians 3:13** Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree."

There is another sense in which every believer may be already sanctified.

**Romans 12:1** Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God -- this is your spiritual act of worship.

It is the believer's present and blessed privilege, and immediate and solemn duty, to present his body to God a living sacrifice -- not some part or parts of the body, but the whole body and its every member and every faculty. Such an offering is "well pleasing to God." As God in the Old Testament showed His pleasure in an offering by sending down fire to take it to Himself, so when the whole body is thus offered to God He still sends down fire, the fire of the Holy Ghost, and takes to Himself what is thus presented. The believer, then, so far as the will, the governing purpose of his life, the center of his being, is concerned, is wholly God's or perfectly sanctified. He may and will daily discover, as he studies the Word of God and is illumined by the Holy Spirit, acts of his, habits of life, forms of feeling, speech and action that are not in conformity with this central purpose of his life. These must be confessed to God as blameworthy, and be put away, and this department of his being and life brought by God's Spirit and the indwelling Christ into conformity with God's will as revealed in His Word.

370.030.020      Torrey: p349, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20:** There is a progressive work of sanctification; an increasing in love; an abounding more and more in godly walk and in pleasing God; a growing in the grace and the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ; a being transformed into the image of our Lord Jesus from glory unto glory, each new gaze at Him making us more like Him; a growing up into Christ in all things, until we attain unto a full-grown man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ.

**1 Thessalonians 3:12** May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you.

**1 Thessalonians 4:1, 10** [1] Finally, brothers, we instructed you how to live in order to please God, as in fact you are living. Now we ask you and urge you in the Lord Jesus to do this more and more. [10] And in fact, you do love all the brothers throughout Macedonia. Yet we urge you, brothers, to do so more and more.

**2 Peter 3:18** But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever! Amen.

**2 Corinthians 3:18** And we, who with unveiled faces all reflect the Lord's glory, are being transformed into his likeness with ever-increasing glory, which comes from the Lord, who is the Spirit.

**Ephesians 4:11-15** [11] It was he who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, [12] to prepare God's people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up [13] until we all reach unity in the faith and in the

knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ. [14] Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming. [15] Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will in all things grow up into him who is the Head, that is, Christ.

370.030.030 Torrey: p349, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: The complete sanctification of believers is something to be sought for in prayer, to be accomplished by God in the future.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23** May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**1 Thessalonians 3:12-13** [12] May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you. [13] May he strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the presence of our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones.

It is at the coming of our Lord Jesus with all is saints that He is to establish our hearts unblamable in holiness before our God and Father, and that our spirit and soul and body are to be preserved entire without blame.

**1 John 3:2** Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

It is through our Lord making us to increase and abound in love unto one another and unto all men that this is accomplished. It is not in the life that now is, nor is it at death, but at the coming of Christ that we are entirely sanctified in this sense.

370.040.000 Torrey: p349, T:IV

**Topic 40: The Results of Sanctification.**

370.040.010 Torrey: p349, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: By the one offering, the sacrifice of Himself for sins, Christ has perfected forever those who are sanctified.**

**Hebrews 10:13-14** [13] Since that time he waits for his enemies to be made his footstool, [14] because by one sacrifice he has made perfect forever those who are being made holy.

Their standing before God as guiltless is already forever secured for the sanctified. The sanctification here spoken of is the separation from the guilt of sin and unto God secured by the shed blood.

370.040.020 Torrey: p350, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: Those whom Jesus sanctifies are of one with Him, and He is not ashamed to call them brethren.**

**Hebrews 2:11** Both the one who makes men holy and those who are made holy are of the same family. So Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers.

370.040.030 Torrey: p350, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: We are saved through sanctification.**

**2 Thessalonians 2:13** But we ought always to thank God for you, brothers loved by the Lord, because from the beginning God chose you to be saved through the sanctifying work of the Spirit and through belief in the truth.

Sanctification results in salvation. The sanctification here spoken of is the sanctification which the Holy Spirit works; and the salvation here spoken of is not salvation in the mere sense of the forgiveness of sins, but salvation in the fullest sense of deliverance from sin's dominion and presence.

370.040.040     Torrey: p350, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: Sanctification results in seeing the Lord.**

**Hebrews 12:14** Make every effort to live in peace with all men and to be holy; without holiness no one will see the Lord.

The sanctification here spoken of is sanctification in the sense of separation from sin, the sanctification which is the outcome of our eager desire for it and God's chastening. without this cleansing from sin it will be impossible to know the blessed vision of the Lord that awaits those who are purified. The purity that leads to this blessed vision of God is not merely outward purity but heart purity.

**Matthew 5:8** Blessed are the pure in heart, for they will see God.

Even in the life that now is, the more completely we are sanctified the clearer is our perception of God.

370.040.050     Torrey: p350, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: Sanctification secures an inheritance.**

**Acts 20:32** Now I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which can build you up and give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified

**Acts 26:17-18** [17] I will rescue you from your own people and from the Gentiles. I am sending you to them [18] to open their eyes and turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me.'

Sanctification by God's Spirit makes us joint heirs with God's Son.

**Romans 8:1-18** [1] Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, [2] because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death. [3] For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man, [4] in order that the righteous requirements of the law might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the sinful nature but according to the Spirit. [5] Those who live according to the sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires; but those who live in accordance with the Spirit have their minds set on what the Spirit desires. [6] The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind controlled by the Spirit is life and peace; [12] Therefore, brothers, we have an obligation -- but it is not to the sinful nature, to live according to it. [13] For if you live according to the sinful nature, you will die; but if by the Spirit you put to death the misdeeds of the body, you will live, [14] because those who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God. [15] For you did not receive a spirit that makes

you a slave again to fear, but you received the Spirit of sonship. And by him we cry, "Abba, Father."  
[16] The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children. [17] Now if we are children,  
then we are heirs -- heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order  
that we may also share in his glory. [18] I consider that our present sufferings are not worth comparing  
with the glory that will be revealed in us.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 380

---

380.000.000      Torrey: p352

### REPENTANCE

380.010.000      Torrey: p352, T:I

**Topic 10: The Importance of Repentance**

380.010.010      Torrey: p352, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: The keynote of the preaching of John the Baptist, Jesus, the Disciples on their first missionary tour and Peter at Pentecost, was "Repent."**

**Matthew 3:1-2** [1] In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the Desert of Judea [2] and saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near."

**Matthew 4:17** From that time on Jesus began to preach, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near."

**Mark 6:12** They went out and preached that people should repent.

**Acts 2:38** Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

380.010.020      Torrey: p352, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: The sum and substance of Paul's testimony to Jew and to Gentile was repentance toward God and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Acts 20:21** I have declared to both Jews and Greeks that they must turn to God in repentance and have faith in our Lord Jesus.

**Acts 26:20** First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and to the Gentiles also, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and prove their repentance by their deeds.

380.010.030      Torrey: p352, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: The heart of Christ's parting commission to the twelve was that "Repentance and Remission of Sins" should be preached unto all the nations.**

**Luke 24:46-47** [46] He told them, "This is what is written: The Christ will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, [47] and repentance and forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

380.010.040 Torrey: p353, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: The Lord's supreme desire concerning all men is that they should come to repentance.**

**2 Peter 3:9** The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.

380.010.050 Torrey: p353, T:I, P:5

**POINT 50: God's one command to all men everywhere is "Repent."**

**Acts 17:30** In the past God overlooked such ignorance, but now he commands all people everywhere to repent.

380.010.060 Torrey: p353, T:I, P:6

**POINT 60: The only door of escape from perdition for any man is repentance.**

**Luke 13:3, 5** [3] I tell you, no! But unless you repent, you too will all perish. [5] I tell you, no! But unless you repent, you too will all perish."

380.020.000 Torrey: p353, T:II

**Topic 20: What is Repentance?**

380.020.010 Torrey: p353, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: The derivation of the words used:**

The primary thought of the Hebrew word translated "repent" in the Old Testament is, to pant, to sigh, to groan, and so to lament, to grieve, to grieve about one's doing. This Hebrew word occurs frequently in the Old Testament in the active form in the sense "to comfort":

**Psalms 23:4** Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil, for you are with me; your rod and your staff, they comfort me.

The Greek word in the New Testament translated "repent" means "to change one's mind." The same Greek word is used in the Septuagint for the Hebrew word mentioned above. So its New Testament meaning is to be determined by this Old Testament usage. There is another Greek word used in the New Testament five times and translated "repent." This word means "it is a care to one afterwards," i.e., it "repents one." This word is also used in the Septuagint to translate the Hebrew word mentioned above. The thought of both sorrow and change of purpose is in the words.

380.020.020 Torrey: p353, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Usage of the words in the Bible.**

**Jeremiah 8:6** I have listened attentively, but they do not say what is right. No one repents of his wickedness, saying, "What have I done?" Each pursues his own course like a horse charging into battle.

**Jeremiah 18:7-8** [7] If at any time I announce that a nation or kingdom is to be uprooted, torn



down and destroyed, [8] and if that nation I warned repents of its evil, then I will relent and not inflict on it the disaster I had planned.

**Jeremiah 26:3** Perhaps they will listen and each will turn from his evil way. Then I will relent and not bring on them the disaster I was planning because of the evil they have done.

**Jeremiah 42:10** If you stay in this land, I will build you up and not tear you down; I will plant you and not uproot you, for I am grieved over the disaster I have inflicted on you.

**Ezekiel 24:14** I the LORD have spoken. The time has come for me to act. I will not hold back; I will not have pity, nor will I relent. You will be judged according to your conduct and your actions, declares the Sovereign LORD.

**Joel 2:13-14** [13] Rend your heart and not your garments. Return to the LORD your God, for he is gracious and compassionate, slow to anger and abounding in love, and he relents from sending calamity. [14] Who knows? He may turn and have pity and leave behind a blessing -- grain offerings and drink offerings for the LORD your God.

**Amos 7:1-6** [1] This is what the Sovereign LORD showed me: He was preparing swarms of locusts after the king's share had been harvested and just as the second crop was coming up. [2] When they had stripped the land clean, I cried out, "Sovereign LORD, forgive! How can Jacob survive? He is so small!" [3] So the LORD relented. "This will not happen," the LORD said. [4] This is what the Sovereign LORD showed me: The Sovereign LORD was calling for judgment by fire; it dried up the great deep and devoured the land. [5] Then I cried out, "Sovereign LORD, I beg you, stop! How can Jacob survive? He is so small!" [6] So the LORD relented. "This will not happen either," the Sovereign LORD said.

**Jonah 3:9-10** [9] Who knows? God may yet relent and with compassion turn from his fierce anger so that we will not perish." [10] When God saw what they did and how they turned from their evil ways, he had compassion and did not bring upon them the destruction he had threatened.

**Matthew 12:41** The men of Nineveh will stand up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now one greater than Jonah is here.

**Jonah 3:8-10** [8] But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth. Let everyone call urgently on God. Let them give up their evil ways and their violence. [9] Who knows? God may yet relent and with compassion turn from his fierce anger so that we will not perish." [10] When God saw what they did and how they turned from their evil ways, he had compassion and did not bring upon them the destruction he had threatened.

In the usage of the words the thought of regret, and the thought of change of purpose and action, are both found; but the emphasis is upon the change of purpose and action, especially in the first New Testament word mentioned above. In our day there is danger of underestimating the importance of sorrow for sin. Sorrow for sin is not repentance, but it is an element in repentance. What the repentance or change of mind is about must always be determined by the context. Repentance of sin is such a sorrow for sin or abhorrence of sin, such a change of mind about it, as leads the sinner to turn away from it with all his heart.

380.030.000      Torrey: p355, T:III

**Topic 30: How Repentance is Manifested.**

380.030.010     Torrey: p355, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: Repentance is manifested in deep sorrow for sin and in self-humiliation and in self-abhorrence.**

**Luke 10:13** Woe to you, Korazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles that were performed in you had been performed in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

**Joel 2:12-13** [12] "Even now," declares the LORD, "return to me with all your heart, with fasting and weeping and mourning." [13] Rend your heart and not your garments. Return to the LORD your God, for he is gracious and compassionate, slow to anger and abounding in love, and he relents from sending calamity.

**Job 42:5-6** [5] My ears had heard of you but now my eyes have seen you. [6] Therefore I despise myself and repent in dust and ashes.

**Luke 18:13** But the tax collector stood at a distance. He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast and said, "God, have mercy on me, a sinner."

There is not enough made of this manifestation of Repentance in these days.

380.030.020     Torrey: p356, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: Repentance is manifested in confession of sin and prayer to God for mercy.**

**Hosea 14:1-2** [1] Return, O Israel, to the LORD your God. Your sins have been your downfall! [2] Take words with you and return to the LORD. Say to him: "Forgive all our sins and receive us graciously, that we may offer the fruit of our lips.

**Luke 18:13-14** [13] But the tax collector stood at a distance. He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast and said, "God, have mercy on me, a sinner." [14] I tell you that this man, rather than the other, went home justified before God. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.

380.030.030     Torrey: p356, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: Repentance is manifested by the sinner turning away from his evil way - - from all his transgressions, his idols and his abominations and his thoughts.**

**Matthew 12:41** The men of Nineveh will stand up at the judgment with this generation and condemn it; for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now one greater than Jonah is here.

**Jonah 3:5-8** [5] The Ninevites believed God. They declared a fast, and all of them, from the greatest to the least, put on sackcloth. [6] When the news reached the king of Nineveh, he rose from his throne, took off his royal robes, covered himself with sackcloth and sat down in the dust. [7] Then he issued a proclamation in Nineveh: "By the decree of the king and his nobles: Do not let any man or beast, herd or flock, taste anything; do not let them eat or drink. [8] But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth. Let everyone call urgently on God. Let them give up their evil ways and their violence.

**Ezekiel 18:30** Therefore, O house of Israel, I will judge you, each one according to his ways, declares the Sovereign LORD. Repent! Turn away from all your offenses; then sin will not be your downfall.

**Ezekiel 14:6** Therefore say to the house of Israel, `This is what the Sovereign LORD says: Repent! Turn from your idols and renounce all your detestable practices!

**Isaiah 55:7** Let the wicked forsake his way and the evil man his thoughts. Let him turn to the LORD, and he will have mercy on him, and to our God, for he will freely pardon.

This is the most important and decisive manifestation of repentance, the one upon which the Bible lays the most emphasis. Note the frequency and urgency of the use of the word "turn" in the Bible. See also:

**Acts 3:19** Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord,

Conversion is the outward proof of the inward Repentance.

**1 Thessalonians 1:8-10** [8] The Lord's message rang out from you not only in Macedonia and Achaia -- your faith in God has become known everywhere. Therefore we do not need to say anything about it, [9] for they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. They tell how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, [10] and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead -- Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath.

380.030.040     Torrey: p357, T:III, P:4

**POINT 40: Repentance is manifested by turning to God to trust and serve Him.**

**Acts 26:20** First to those in Damascus, then to those in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and to the Gentiles also, I preached that they should repent and turn to God and prove their repentance by their deeds.

**1 Samuel 7:3** And Samuel said to the whole house of Israel, "If you are returning to the LORD with all your hearts, then rid yourselves of the foreign gods and the Ashtoreths and commit yourselves to the LORD and serve him only, and he will deliver you out of the hand of the Philistines."

**Matthew 3:8** Produce fruit in keeping with repentance.

There are two sides to Repentance - turning from and turning to.

**1 Thessalonians 1:8-10** [8] The Lord's message rang out from you not only in Macedonia and Achaia -- your faith in God has become known everywhere. Therefore we do not need to say anything about it, [9] for they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. They tell how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, [10] and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead -- Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath.

380.030.045     Torrey: p357, T:III, P:4

**POINT 45: Repentance is manifested by bringing forth fruit, or doing works, worthy of repentance.**

Not merely abstinence from evil, but performance of good.

**Luke 3:10-14** [10] "What should we do then?" the crowd asked. [11] John answered, "The man with two tunics should share with him who has none, and the one who has food should do the same."

[12] Tax collectors also came to be baptized. "Teacher," they asked, "what should we do?" [13] "Don't collect any more than you are required to," he told them. [14] Then some soldiers asked him, "And what should we do?" He replied, "Don't extort money and don't accuse people falsely -- be content with your pay."

380.030.050      Torrey: p357, T:III, P:5

**POINT 50: Repentance is manifested by baptism.**

**Mark 1:4** And so John came, baptizing in the desert region and preaching a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins.

**Acts 2:38** Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

380.040.000      Torrey: p357, T:IV

**Topic 40: The Results of Repentance.**

380.040.010      Torrey: p358, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: There is joy in heaven, in the presence of the Angels of God, over one sinner who repents.**

**Luke 15:7, 10** I tell you that in the same way there will be more rejoicing in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who do not need to repent.

This is the supreme result of repentance. We should work for the repentance of sinners more because of the joy it brings to God and Christ than because of the blessings it brings to men.

380.040.020      Torrey: p358, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: Repentance results in pardon, remission of sins, the blotting out of sins.**

**Isaiah 55:7** Let the wicked forsake his way and the evil man his thoughts. Let him turn to the LORD, and he will have mercy on him, and to our God, for he will freely pardon.

**Luke 24:46-47** [46] He told them, "This is what is written: The Christ will suffer and rise from the dead on the third day, [47] and repentance and forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem."

**Mark 1:4** And so John came, baptizing in the desert region and preaching a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins.

**Acts 2:38** Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

**Acts 3:19** Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord,

This remission is "in the name of Jesus Christ" -- i.e., on the ground of His work. Repentance is the condition upon which the remission secured by the death of Jesus Christ is made our own.

380.040.030      Torrey: p358, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: Repentance is one of the primary conditions for receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit.**

**Acts 2:38** Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

The gift of the Holy Spirit is for all those who repent and are baptized in the name of Jesus Christ unto the remission of sins. It is for them to "take" (the exact force of the word rendered "receive").

380.040.040      Torrey: p359, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: The Repentance of God's people will result in times of refreshing from the presence of the Lord and the sending of the Messiah.**

**Acts 3:19-21** [19] Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord, [20] and that he may send the Christ, who has been appointed for you -- even Jesus. [21] He must remain in heaven until the time comes for God to restore everything, as he promised long ago through his holy prophets.

These words were spoken to the Israelites and the implication is that the repentance of Israel will, result in the coming of the Christ who has been appointed for them, even Jesus.

380.050.000      Torrey: p359, T:V

**Topic 50: How Repentance is Effected.**

380.050.010      Torrey: p359, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Repentance unto life is God's gift.**

**Acts 11:18** When they heard this, they had no further objections and praised God, saying, "So then, God has granted even the Gentiles repentance unto life."

(The word rendered "granted" in this verse is the word ordinarily translated "given.")

380.050.020      Torrey: p359, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: Jesus, once crucified but now exalted, gives repentance.**

**Acts 5:30-31** [30] The God of our fathers raised Jesus from the dead -- whom you had killed by hanging him on a tree. [31] God exalted him to his own right hand as Prince and Savior that he might give repentance and forgiveness of sins to Israel.

380.050.030      Torrey: p359, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Repentance is effected through the preaching of the Word by men filled with the Holy Ghost.**

**Acts 2:37-38, 41** [37] When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?" [38] Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. ..." [41] Those who accepted his message were baptized, and about three thousand were added to their number that day.

By the verses that precede we see that what they heard was the word of God, preached by men "filled with the Holy Spirit."

**1 Thessalonians 1:4-6, 8- 10** [4] For we know, brothers loved by God, that he has chosen you, [5] because our gospel came to you not simply with words, but also with power, with the Holy

Spirit and with deep conviction. You know how we lived among you for your sake. [6] You became imitators of us and of the Lord; in spite of severe suffering, you welcomed the message with the joy given by the Holy Spirit. [8] ... Therefore we do not need to say anything about it, [9] for they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. They tell how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, [10] and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead -- Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath.

The Word of God is the means used for the bestowal of the gift of repentance.

380.050.040 Torrey: p360, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: Repentance results when men believe God's Word.**

**Jonah 3:5-10** [5] The Ninevites believed God. They declared a fast, and all of them, from the greatest to the least, put on sackcloth. [6] When the news reached the king of Nineveh, he rose from his throne, took off his royal robes, covered himself with sackcloth and sat down in the dust. [7] Then he issued a proclamation in Nineveh: "By the decree of the king and his nobles: Do not let any man or beast, herd or flock, taste anything; do not let them eat or drink. [8] But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth. Let everyone call urgently on God. Let them give up their evil ways and their violence. [9] Who knows? God may yet relent and with compassion turn from his fierce anger so that we will not perish." [10] When God saw what they did and how they turned from their evil ways, he had compassion and did not bring upon them the destruction he had threatened.

380.050.050 Torrey: p360, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: The goodness of God leads men to Repentance.**

**Romans 2:4** Or do you show contempt for the riches of his kindness, tolerance and patience, not realizing that God's kindness leads you toward repentance?

The word here rendered "goodness" is an adjective meaning ordinarily in the New Testament usage "kind" or "gracious."

**Luke 6:35** But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked.

**Ephesians 4:32** Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

**1 Peter 2:2-3** [2] Like newborn babies, crave pure spiritual milk, so that by it you may grow up in your salvation, [3] now that you have tasted that the Lord is good.

It is the kindness and patience and forbearance of God that leads men to repentance.

**2 Peter 3:9** The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, as some understand slowness. He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance.

380.050.060 Torrey: p361, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: Repentance is effected through God's loving reproof and chastisement.**

**Revelation 3:19** Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent.



**Hebrews 12:5-6, 10-11** [5] And you have forgotten that word of encouragement that addresses you as sons: "My son, do not make light of the Lord's discipline, and do not lose heart when he rebukes you, [6] because the Lord disciplines those he loves, and he punishes everyone he accepts as a son." [7] Endure hardship as discipline; God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father? [8] If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children and not true sons. [9] Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live! [10] Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his holiness. [11] No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.

**Psalms 119:67** Before I was afflicted I went astray, but now I obey your word.

380.050.070     Torrey: p361, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: Repentance is effected through the meek and gentle correction administered by the servant of the Lord.**

**2 Timothy 2:24-25** [24] And the Lord's servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. [25] Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth,

380.050.080     Torrey: p361, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: Godly sorrow works repentance.**

**2 Corinthians 7:8-11** [8] Even if I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it. Though I did regret it -- I see that my letter hurt you, but only for a little while -- [9] yet now I am happy, not because you were made sorry, but because your sorrow led you to repentance. For you became sorrowful as God intended and so were not harmed in any way by us. [10] Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, but worldly sorrow brings death. [11] See what this godly sorrow has produced in you: what earnestness, what eagerness to clear yourselves, what indignation, what alarm, what longing, what concern, what readiness to see justice done. At every point you have proved yourselves to be innocent in this matter.

The godly sorrow in this case was itself wrought by the correction administered by the Lord's servant.

380.050.090     Torrey: p361, T:V, P:9

**POINT 90: The sight of God causes repentance.**

**Job 42:5-6** [5] My ears had heard of you but now my eyes have seen you. [6] Therefore I despise myself and repent in dust and ashes.

Nothing is so calculated to impress sinful man with a hatred of sin, and abhorrence of self as a sinner, as a real view of God. If then we wish to bring men to repentance, let us bring them face to face with God. This can be effected by showing them God as revealed in His Word. But it must be done in the power of the Holy Spirit.



# What the Bible Teaches

## Chapter 390

---

390.000.000      Torrey: p362

### FAITH

390.010.000      Torrey: p362, T:I

Topic 10: What is Faith?

390.010.010      Torrey: p362, T:I, P:(1)

**POINT 10: Faith is the assurance of things hoped for, a conviction (being convinced) of things not seen. The foundation upon which this assurance of things hoped for, this conviction of things not seen, rests, is God's Word.**

**Hebrews 11:1** Now faith is being sure of what we hope for and certain of what we do not see.

**Hebrews 11:7, 11, 17-19, 22, 30** [7] By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith. [11] By faith Abraham, even though he was past age -- and Sarah herself was barren -- was enabled to become a father because he considered him faithful who had made the promise. [17] By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, [18] even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." [19] Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death. [22] By faith Joseph, when his end was near, spoke about the exodus of the Israelites from Egypt and gave instructions about his bones. [30] By faith the walls of Jericho fell, after the people had marched around them for seven days.

Faith means that one *acts* on something with the *assurance* that it is true, even though one does not yet have any *observable evidence* or *proof* that it is true. It is important to understand that faith in the biblical sense is not a mere *assumption*, a simple *hope* that the fact is true. One who simply hopes or assumes is not acting on faith -- he is *gambling*. A person who has faith *knows* that the thing is true.

Conversely, biblical faith only exists until one has proof discernable with the physical senses. Initially, Jesus had faith that the Father had the power to resurrect someone from death. Once the Father resurrected Lazarus from the dead, Jesus no longer had *faith*, He had *observable evidence*.

**Hebrews 11:1 King James Version** Faith is the *substance* of things *hoped for*, the *evidence* of things not *seen*.

This is a particularly good translation. Faith is *the evidence*. This means that the believer is *not* acting *without* evidence. He is acting *with* evidence, but with evidence *not discernable by the natural, i.e., the physical senses*. Faith is the *substance* of the thing hoped for. It is the *initial reality* of the thing hoped for.

Consider this -- I hope for a raise, I ask my boss for a raise, and he agrees. *Initially* he forms a thought in his mind, approving the raise. *At that point* the raise *actually* exists, even though he has not yet communicated that fact to anyone.

There is a time delay between the time God ordains something and the time it becomes physical reality. Sometimes it is almost non-existent: *And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. Genesis 1:3*. Sometimes it is thousands of years:

**Ezekiel 36:33 24, 28-30, 33- 35** [24] *For I will take you out of the nations; I will gather you from all the countries and bring you back into your own land.* [28] *You will live in the land I gave your forefathers;* you will be my people, and I will be your God. [29] *I will save you from all your uncleanness. I will call for the grain and make it plentiful and will not bring famine upon you.* [30] *I will increase the fruit of the trees and the crops of the field, so that you will no longer suffer disgrace among the nations because of famine.* [33] *This is what the Sovereign LORD says: On the day I cleanse you from all your sins, I will resettle your towns, and the ruins will be rebuilt.* [34] *The desolate land will be cultivated instead of lying desolate in the sight of all who pass through it.* [35] *They will say, "This land that was laid waste has become like the garden of Eden; the cities that were lying in ruins, desolate and destroyed, are now fortified and inhabited."*

This prophecy, decreed more than five centuries before the birth of Christ, began to come true in 1948 when Israel won its independence.

The point of *faith* is that the believer accepts God's Word as *fact*, not *probability* or possibility.

Dr. Fred K. C. Price of Ever Increasing Faith Ministries has presented numerous televised sermons on the meaning and application of faith. The discussion of this Point is partly based on his explanations.

390.010.020      Torrey: p362, T:1, P:2

**POINT 20: The meaning of "Faith" when used in connection with prayer: In prayer, faith is the firm expectation, the assurance, free from all doubts, of getting the thing asked.**

**James 1:5-8** [5] *If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.* [6] *But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind.* [7] *That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord;* [8] *he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.*

**Mark 11:24** *Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.*

The prayer of faith reckons the thing asked as already really its own, because God has heard the request and granted the thing asked, and what God has granted is as really ours as if we had it already in our possession experimentally.

**1 John 5:14-15:** [14] This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. [15] And if we know that he hears us -- whatever we ask -- we know that we have what we asked of him.

390.010.030 Torrey: p362, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30:** The meaning of "Faith" when used in connection with God. To believe God is to rely upon or have unhesitating assurance of the truth of God's testimony, even though it is unsupported by any *other* evidence, and to rely upon or have unfaltering assurance of the fulfillment of his promises, even though everything seen seems against fulfillment.

**1 John 5:10** Anyone who believes in the Son of God has this testimony in his heart. Anyone who does not believe God has made him out to be a liar, because he has not believed the testimony God has given about his Son.

**John 5:24** I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life.

**Acts 27:22-25** [22] But now I urge you to keep up your courage, because not one of you will be lost; only the ship will be destroyed. [23] Last night an angel of the God whose I am and whom I serve stood beside me [24] and said, 'Do not be afraid, Paul. You must stand trial before Caesar; and God has graciously given you the lives of all who sail with you.' [25] So keep up your courage, men, for I have faith in God that it will happen just as he told me.

**Romans 4:3** What does the Scripture say? "Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness."

**Genesis 15:4-6** [4] Then the word of the LORD came to him: "This man will not be your heir, but a son coming from your own body will be your heir." [5] He took him outside and said, "Look up at the heavens and count the stars -- if indeed you can count them." Then he said to him, "So shall your offspring be." [6] Abram believed the LORD, and he credited it to him as righteousness.

**Romans 4:19-21** [19] Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead -- since he was about a hundred years old -- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. [20] Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, [21] being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

It is "taking God at his word." Faith is not belief without evidence discernable by the physical senses. It is belief on the very best of evidence, the word of Him who cannot lie.

**Titus 1:2** a faith and knowledge resting on the hope of eternal life, which God, who does not lie, promised before the beginning of time,

Faith is so rational that it asks no other evidence than this all-sufficient evidence. To ask other evidence than the word of Him "who cannot lie" is not "rationalism," but consummate irrationalism.

**2 Chronicles 20:20** Early in the morning they left for the Desert of Tekoa. As they set out, Jehoshaphat stood and said, "Listen to me, Judah and people of Jerusalem! Have faith in the LORD your God and you will be upheld; have faith in his prophets and you will be successful."

**John 14:1** Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me.

To believe in God is to rely upon, or put confidence in God Himself. When we believe God we trust His word; when we believe in God we trust Him. When we believe God we fix our eyes on what He has said:

**Romans 4:20-21** Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, [21] being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

When we believe in God we fix our eyes upon what He is, upon His person, upon Him.

Note -- There are two Hebrew words for "trust" and "faith." The first, translated "believe" and "trust" means primarily in the transitive, "to prop," "to stay," "to support". In the intransitive, "to stay oneself." The second word, translated "trust," seems to mean "to cast oneself upon." When we believe God we stay ourselves upon His word; when we believe in God we stay ourselves upon Him.

390.010.040      Torrey: p362, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40:** The meaning of "Faith" when used in connection with Jesus Christ: Faith in Jesus Christ is relying upon, or putting confidence in Jesus Christ. It is the assurance that He will do the things sought of him or take care of the matters entrusted to him. It is simply relying upon him for these things.

**John 14:1** Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me.

**Matthew 9:21-22** [21] She said to herself, "If I only touch his cloak, I will be healed." [22] Jesus turned and saw her. "Take heart, daughter," he said, "your faith has healed you." And the woman was healed from that moment.

**Matthew 9:29** Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith will it be done to you";

**Matthew 15:25, 28** [25] The woman came and knelt before him. "Lord, help me!" she said. [28] Then Jesus answered, "Woman, you have great faith! Your request is granted." And her daughter was healed from that very hour.

**Matthew 8:8-10** [8] The centurion replied, "Lord, I do not deserve to have you come under my roof. But just say the word, and my servant will be healed. [9] For I myself am a man under authority, with soldiers under me. I tell this one, 'Go,' and he goes; and that one, 'Come,' and he comes. I say to my servant, 'Do this,' and he does it." [10] When Jesus heard this, he was astonished and said to those following him, "I tell you the truth, I have not found anyone in Israel with such great faith.

**Luke 7:48-50** [48] Then Jesus said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." [49] The other guests began to say among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" [50] Jesus said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

**John 14:12** I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.

**2 Timothy 1:12** That is why I am suffering as I am. Yet I am not ashamed, because I know whom I have believed, and am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him for that day.

What Jesus Christ is relied upon for varies in different cases. (In the several cases cited above it was for care, healing, sight, help, the healing of another, pardon, power.) What he is relied upon for, that will he do.

**Matthew 9:29** Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith will it be done to you";

Relying upon Christ for healing brings healing, relying upon Christ for help brings help, relying upon Christ for pardon brings pardon, relying upon Christ for power brings power, relying upon Christ for victory brings victory. What we have a right to rely upon him for is determined by his character and his definite promises.

390.020.000      Torrey: p365, T:II

**Topic 20: Saving Faith.**

390.020.010      Torrey: p365, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Saving Faith is believing with the heart.**

**Romans 10:9-10** [9] That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. [10] For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved.

In order to be saved we must believe with the heart. In the Bible the heart stands for the thought, feelings and will. A heart-faith, then is a faith that rules the thought, the feelings and the will. The manifestation of heart-faith is *action* in the direction of that which is believed.

**Hebrews 11:7-8, 17, 19-20, 22, 24-26, 28** [7] By faith Noah, when warned about things not yet seen, in holy fear built an ark to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness that comes by faith. [8] By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going. [17] By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, .... [19] Abraham reasoned that God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death. [20] By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau in regard to their future. [22] By faith Joseph, when his end was near, spoke about the exodus of the Israelites from Egypt and gave instructions about his bones. [24] By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be known as the son of Pharaoh's daughter. [25] He chose to be mistreated along with the people of God rather than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a short time. [26] He regarded disgrace for the sake of Christ as of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, because he was looking ahead to his reward. [28] By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, so that the destroyer of the firstborn would not touch the firstborn of Israel.

390.020.020      Torrey: p366, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Saving Faith is a faith that works by doing what the one who is believed in bids us to do.**

**James 2:25 14-17, 21-22, 24- 26** [14] What good is it, my brothers, if a man claims to have faith but has no deeds? Can such faith save him? [15] Suppose a brother or sister is without clothes and daily food. [16] If one of you says to him, "Go, I wish you well; keep warm and well fed," but does nothing about his physical needs, what good is it? [17] In the same way, faith by itself, if it is not accompanied by action, is dead. [21] Was not our ancestor Abraham considered righteous for what he

did when he offered his son Isaac on the altar? [22] You see that his faith and his actions were working together, and his faith was made complete by what he did. [24] You see that a person is justified by what he does and not by faith alone. [25] In the same way, was not even Rahab the prostitute considered righteous for what she did when she gave lodging to the spies and sent them off in a different direction? [26] As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without deeds is dead.

#### OBJECTIONS:

(a) Isn't this really saying that a person must *earn* his way into heaven by good works?

No, this is defining the term faith. It is saying that faith does not consist of a mere intellectual belief. I have total faith that I can get up and walk across the room, but unless I *do* it, I'll never get to the other side of the room.

(b) Doesn't the Bible say that there is nothing Man can do that pleases God?

Repentance pleases God. It pleases God that a man earnestly *tries* to lead a righteous life.

(c) What about the doctrine of *solo fide*, i.e., "Man is justified *by faith alone*"?

This doctrine states the *result* of having faith. However, it does not *define* what type of faith is necessary to obtain justification.

(d) I thought Christian theologians say that Jesus offered a perfect and complete sacrifice, that His sacrifice was all that was necessary.

It says that one must *believe* in Him. Believing in Him is another way of saying one must have *faith* in Him. James is defining what "having faith" means.

(e) I thought Christian theologians teach that because of Jesus' sacrifice anything Man tries to do in addition is entirely superfluous.

There is a difference between doing good works because one has faith and doing good works because one believes the works themselves will provide the justification.

Consider these analogies:

One person may volunteer at a hospital because he feels sorry for those who are sick and wants to improve their lives. Another may volunteer because it will look good on his resume.

Some people play golf because they find it enjoyable and challenging. However, many businessmen hate golf but they spend time and money learning and playing it solely because it will help them make business contacts.

God created Man because He wanted companionship throughout eternity. Like mankind, God wants to spend time with sentient beings that are like-minded, but not identical to himself. If you love golf, who would you prefer to spend your time with: someone who also loves golf, or someone who is technically good at it but doesn't like it and would rather be somewhere else?

390.020.030     Torrey: p366, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: Saving Faith is the faith which works by love.**

**Galatians 5:6** For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. The



only thing that counts is faith expressing itself through love.

390.020.040 Torrey: p367, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Saving Faith is the faith which receives Jesus Christ as He comes to us, and for all that He offers Himself to be.**

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

He offers Himself as our sin-bearer. Saving Faith accepts Him as such and rests all its hope for pardon on His atoning blood. He offers Himself as our deliverer from sin's power:

**John 8:34, 36** [34] Jesus replied, "I tell you the truth, everyone who sins is a slave to sin. [36] So if the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed.

Saving Faith accepts Him as such and relies utterly upon Him and expects Him to give such deliverance. He offers Himself as our Teacher and Lord.

**John 13:13** You call me 'Teacher' and 'Lord,' and rightly so, for that is what I am.

Saving Faith accepts Him as such and surrenders the mind unreservedly to His teaching and the life to His absolute control.

390.020.050 Torrey: p367, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: Saving Faith in Jesus Christ is the faith that commits to Jesus Christ.**

**2 Timothy 1:12** That is why I am suffering as I am. Yet I am not ashamed, because I know whom I have believed, and am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him for that day.

390.020.060 Torrey: p367, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: Saving Faith is a faith that calls upon the name of the Lord.**

**Romans 10:13-14** [13] for, "Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved." [14] How, then, can they call on the one they have not believed in? And how can they believe in the one of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them?

NOTE -- The context plainly shows that the Lord here is the Lord Jesus Christ (v. 9). To call upon His name implies: First, a deep recognition of our need of salvation. Second, an earnest desire to be saved. Third, an utter casting away of hope in any other way of salvation. Fourth, a hope that He will save. The faith that recognizes our own lost condition, that earnestly desires salvation, that casts away all hope in any one or any thing but the Lord Jesus, and that hopes (or has the assurance) that He will save, and puts Him to the test by crying to Him is the faith that saves.

390.020.070 Torrey: p367, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: Saving Faith is the faith that confesses Jesus as Lord.**

**Romans 10:9** That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.

390.020.080 Torrey: p368, T:II, P:8



**POINT 80: Saving Faith is the faith that does not shrink back from the confession and service of Christ Jesus in danger and trial.**

**Hebrews 10:38-39** [38] But my righteous one will live by faith. And if he shrinks back, I will not be pleased with him." [39] But we are not of those who shrink back and are destroyed, but of those who believe and are saved.

390.025.000 Torrey: p368, T:II(2)

**Topic 25: The Contents of Saving Faith, or What We Must Believe in Order to be Saved.**

399.025.010 Torrey: p368, T:II(2), P:1

**POINT 10: In order to be saved we must believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God.**

**John 20:31** But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

Of course this must be a heart-faith, a faith that leads to action along the line of that which is believed, as seen above. Not merely a theological opinion that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, but such an assurance or conviction that He is as leads us to put our trust in him, and to submit our thoughts and feelings and purposes and lives to His control.

399.025.020 Torrey: p368, T:II(2), P:2

**POINT 20: In order to be saved we must believe the gospel.**

**Romans 1:16** I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile.

QUESTION: What is the gospel?

ANSWER:

**1 Corinthians 15:1-4** [1] Now, brothers, I want to remind you of the gospel I preached to you, which you received and on which you have taken your stand. [2] By this gospel you are saved, if you hold firmly to the word I preached to you. Otherwise, you have believed in vain. [3] For what I received I passed on to you as of first importance: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, [4] that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures, [5] and that he appeared to Peter, and then to the Twelve.

**Romans 1:17-25** [17] For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: "The righteous will live by faith." [18] The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, [19] since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. [20] For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities -- his eternal power and divine nature -- have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. [21] For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. [22] Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools [23] and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. [24] Therefore God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. [25] They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator -- who is forever praised. Amen.

The gospel is, that "Christ died for our sins in fulfillment of the Scriptures ... was buried ... and rose again." This we must believe in order to be saved. This involves faith in Him as the Christ the Son of God.

Note: Most Bibles translate this as "according to the Scriptures ..." However, the term "according to" is ambiguous; compare (a) "According to Bill, the package has arrived. According to Fred, it hasn't." and (b) "Everything is going according to plan."

"According to the Scriptures ..." means that Jesus acted in fulfillment of God's written plan.

**Romans 1:1-4** [1] Paul, a servant of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God -- [2] the gospel he promised beforehand through his prophets in the Holy Scriptures [3] regarding his Son, who as to his human nature was a descendant of David, [4] and who through the Spirit of holiness was declared with power to be the Son of God by his resurrection from the dead: Jesus Christ our Lord.

Faith that He died for our sins brings pardon; faith that he rose again brings deliverance from sin's power. Our course, this also must be a heart-faith.

399.025.030     Torrey: p369, T:II(2), P:3

**POINT 30: In order to be saved we must believe that God has raised the Lord Jesus from the dead.**

**Romans 10:9** That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.

This involves faith in His Divinity, in His propitiatory death and God's acceptance of it, and in His intercession for us, and His power to deliver us from sin.

**Romans 1:1-4** [1] Paul, a servant of Christ Jesus, called to be an apostle and set apart for the gospel of God -- [2] the gospel he promised beforehand through his prophets in the Holy Scriptures [3] regarding his Son, who as to his human nature was a descendant of David, [4] and who through the Spirit of holiness was declared with power to be the Son of God by his resurrection from the dead: Jesus Christ our Lord.

**Romans 4:25** He was delivered over to death for our sins and was raised to life for our justification.

**Hebrews 7:25** Therefore he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them.

390.025.040     Torrey: p369, T:II(2), P:4

**POINT 40: In order to be saved we must believe that Jesus can and will forgive our sin.**

**Luke 7:48-50** [48] Then Jesus said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." [49] The other guests began to say among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" [50] Jesus said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

This faith involves faith in the Divinity of Jesus, for God alone can forgive sin.

390.030.000     Torrey: p369, T:III

## Topic 30: How Faith is Manifested.

390.030.010 Torrey: p369, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: Faith in Jesus is manifested by our bringing to Him our need and surmounting all the obstacles that lie between us and him.**

**Mark 2:3-5** [3] Some men came, bringing to him a paralytic, carried by four of them. [4] Since they could not get him to Jesus because of the crowd, they made an opening in the roof above Jesus and, after digging through it, lowered the mat the paralyzed man was lying on. [5] When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic, "Son, your sins are forgiven."

390.030.020 Torrey: p370, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: Faith in Jesus is manifested by our holding on to Jesus for the desired blessing in the face of discouragement, even in the face of His apparent refusal to bestow it.**

**Matthew 15:22-28** [22] A Canaanite woman from that vicinity came to him, crying out, "Lord, Son of David, have mercy on me! My daughter is suffering terribly from demon-possession." [23] Jesus did not answer a word. So his disciples came to him and urged him, "Send her away, for she keeps crying out after us." [24] He answered, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel." [25] The woman came and knelt before him. "Lord, help me!" she said. [26] He replied, "It is not right to take the children's bread and toss it to their dogs." [27] "Yes, Lord," she said, "but even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their masters' table." [28] Then Jesus answered, "Woman, you have great faith! Your request is granted." And her daughter was healed from that very hour.

390.030.030 Torrey: p370, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: Faith in God's Word is manifested by men turning to the Lord.**

**Acts 11:19-21** [19] Now those who had been scattered by the persecution in connection with Stephen traveled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus and Antioch, telling the message only to Jews. [20] Some of them, however, men from Cyprus and Cyrene, went to Antioch and began to speak to Greeks also, telling them the good news about the Lord Jesus. [21] The Lord's hand was with them, and a great number of people believed and turned to the Lord.

390.030.040 Torrey: p370, T:III, P:4

**POINT 40: Faith is manifested by prompt and exact obedience to the commandments of Him who is believed in, simply because He commands, though we know not the purpose of His command, nor the outcome of our obedience.**

**Hebrews 11:17 8, 17-18** [8] By faith Abraham, when called to go to a place he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went, even though he did not know where he was going. [17] By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, [18] even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned."

390.030.050 Torrey: p371, T:III, P:5

**POINT 50: Faith is manifested by a disregard for the difficulties that lie in the way of the fulfillment of God's promises.**

**Hebrews 11:17-19** [17] By faith Abraham, when God tested him, offered Isaac as a sacrifice. He who had received the promises was about to sacrifice his one and only son, [18] even though God had said to him, "It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned." [19] Abraham reasoned that

God could raise the dead, and figuratively speaking, he did receive Isaac back from death.

**Romans 4:18-21** [18] Against all hope, Abraham in hope believed and so became the father of many nations, just as it had been said to him, "So shall your offspring be." [19] Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead -- since he was about a hundred years old -- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. [20] Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, [21] being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

**Numbers 13:31-33** [31] But the men who had gone up with him said, "We can't attack those people; they are stronger than we are." [32] And they spread among the Israelites a bad report about the land they had explored. They said, "The land we explored devours those living in it. All the people we saw there are of great size. [33] We saw the Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from the Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them."

**Numbers 14:6-9** [6] Joshua son of Nun and Caleb son of Jephunneh, who were among those who had explored the land, tore their clothes [7] and said to the entire Israelite assembly, "The land we passed through and explored is exceedingly good. [8] If the LORD is pleased with us, he will lead us into that land, a land flowing with milk and honey, and will give it to us. [9] Only do not rebel against the LORD. And do not be afraid of the people of the land, because we will swallow them up. Their protection is gone, but the LORD is with us. Do not be afraid of them."

Difficulties are nothing to one who believes in God and His Word: God is mightier than all obstacles, and His Word sure in the face of all apparent impossibility of fulfillment.

390.030.060      Torrey: p371, T:III, P:6

**POINT 60: Faith is manifested by steadfastness in the path God points out in the face of obstacles, peril and apparent loss.**

**Hebrews 11:27** By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the king's anger; he persevered because he saw him who is invisible.

390.030.070      Torrey: p371, T:III, P:7

**POINT 70: Faith is manifested by the sacrifice of the present seen, but transient advantage, for the sake of the future unseen, but permanent advantage.**

**Hebrews 11:24-26** [24] By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be known as the son of Pharaoh's daughter. [25] He chose to be mistreated along with the people of God rather than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a short time. [26] He regarded disgrace for the sake of Christ as of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, because he was looking ahead to his reward.

390.030.080      Torrey: p372, T:III, P:8

**POINT 80: Faith is manifested by large expectations bases upon God's large promises, even though as yet nothing may be seen.**

**Hebrews 11:20-21** [20] By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau in regard to their future. [21] By faith Jacob, when he was dying, blessed each of Joseph's sons, and worshiped as he leaned on the top of his staff.

**Genesis 27:27-29** [27] So he went to him and kissed him. When Isaac caught the smell of his clothes, he blessed him and said, "Ah, the smell of my son is like the smell of a field that the LORD

has blessed. [28] May God give you of heaven's dew and of earth's richness -- an abundance of grain and new wine. [29] May nations serve you and peoples bow down to you. Be lord over your brothers, and may the sons of your mother bow down to you. May those who curse you be cursed and those who bless you be blessed."

**Genesis 48:17 5-20** [5] "Now then, your two sons born to you in Egypt before I came to you here will be reckoned as mine; Ephraim and Manasseh will be mine, just as Reuben and Simeon are mine. [6] Any children born to you after them will be yours; in the territory they inherit they will be reckoned under the names of their brothers. [7] As I was returning from Paddan, to my sorrow Rachel died in the land of Canaan while we were still on the way, a little distance from Ephrath. So I buried her there beside the road to Ephrath" (that is, Bethlehem). [8] When Israel saw the sons of Joseph, he asked, "Who are these?" [9] "They are the sons God has given me here," Joseph said to his father. Then Israel said, "Bring them to me so I may bless them." [10] Now Israel's eyes were failing because of old age, and he could hardly see. So Joseph brought his sons close to him, and his father kissed them and embraced them. [11] Israel said to Joseph, "I never expected to see your face again, and now God has allowed me to see your children too." [12] Then Joseph removed them from Israel's knees and bowed down with his face to the ground. [13] And Joseph took both of them, Ephraim on his right toward Israel's left hand and Manasseh on his left toward Israel's right hand, and brought them close to him. [14] But Israel reached out his right hand and put it on Ephraim's head, though he was the younger, and crossing his arms, he put his left hand on Manasseh's head, even though Manasseh was the firstborn. [15] Then he blessed Joseph and said, "May the God before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac walked, the God who has been my shepherd all my life to this day, [16] the Angel who has delivered me from all harm -- may he bless these boys. May they be called by my name and the names of my fathers Abraham and Isaac, and may they increase greatly upon the earth." [17] When Joseph saw his father placing his right hand on Ephraim's head he was displeased; so he took hold of his father's hand to move it from Ephraim's head to Manasseh's head. [18] Joseph said to him, "No, my father, this one is the firstborn; put your right hand on his head." [19] But his father refused and said, "I know, my son, I know. He too will become a people, and he too will become great. Nevertheless, his younger brother will be greater than he, and his descendants will become a group of nations." [20] He blessed them that day and said, "In your name will Israel pronounce this blessing: 'May God make you like Ephraim and Manasseh.'" So he put Ephraim ahead of Manasseh.

390.035.000      Torrey: p372, T:IV

**Topic 35: We are Saved through Faith.**

Salvation is a manifold process, but every factor in it is dependent upon faith.

390.035.010      Torrey: p372, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: We are saved through faith.**

**Ephesians 2:8** For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith -- and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God

Salvation is God's free gift; faith appropriate to itself this gift freely offered to all.

**Romans 1:16** I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile.

The gospel has power to save, but that power is displayed only in those who believe.

**1 Timothy 4:9-10** [9] This is a trustworthy saying that deserves full acceptance [10] (and for

this we labor and strive), that we have put our hope in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, and especially of those who believe.

390.035.020     Torrey: p373, T:IV, P:1(a)

**POINT 20: We receive remission of sins through faith.**

**Acts 10:43** All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name.

God offers forgiveness to all men on the ground of the shed blood of Christ. The one who believes appropriates to himself individually this universal offer of salvation.

390.035.030     Torrey: p373, T:IV, P:1(b)

**POINT 30: Because Christ took the curse of sin for us, God offers us justification. This offer is accepted by faith.**

We are justified by faith.

**Romans 5:1-2** [1] Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, [2] through whom we have gained access by faith into this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God.

**Galatians 3:13** Christ redeemed us from the curse of the law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who is hung on a tree."

390.035.040     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(c)

**POINT 40: We receive eternal life through believing.**

**John 20:31** But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

**John 14:6** Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me."

**1 John 5:11** And this is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

Belief in Him who is the life makes that life ours. Life is in Him; by our believing in Him this life enters into us.

390.035.050     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(d)

**POINT 50: We receive the right to become sons of God by faith.**

**John 1:12-13** [12] Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God -- [13] children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God.

**Galatians 3:26** [26] You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus,

In His only begotten Son God makes to man the offer of adoption into His family. We appropriate this offer to ourselves by believing in His name.

390.035.060     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(e)



**POINT 60: We become partakers of the Divine Nature through faith in the exceeding great and precious promises of God.**

**2 Peter 1:4** Through these he has given us his very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world caused by evil desires.

390.035.070     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(f)

**POINT 70: We are sanctified by faith.**

**Acts 26:17-18** [17] I will rescue you from your own people and from the Gentiles. I am sending you to them [18] to open their eyes and turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me.'

God offers to us sanctifying grace in His word. By faith we appropriate this sanctifying grace to ourselves.

390.035.080     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(g)

**POINT 80: Our hearts are cleansed by faith.**

**Acts 15:9** He made no distinction between us and them, for he purified their hearts by faith.

There is a heart-cleansing power in the Word of God. Upon faith in that Word it exercises its heart-cleansing power in us.

**Psalms 119:9, 11** [9] How can a young man keep his way pure? By living according to your word. [11] I have hidden your word in my heart that I might not sin against you.

390.035.090     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(h)

**POINT 90: Christ dwells in our hearts through faith.**

**Ephesians 3:16-17** [16] I pray that out of his glorious riches he may strengthen you with power through his Spirit in your inner being, [17] so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith. ...

God presents Christ to us by His Spirit through the Word. Faith lays hold upon Christ thus presented and he comes to dwell in the heart and work all His glorious work within.

390.035.100     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(i)

**POINT 100: We are kept through faith by the power of God unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.**

**1 Peter 1:5** [3] Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, [4] and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil or fade -- kept in heaven for you, [5] who through faith are shielded by God's power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time.

God provides keeping, His own almighty power to keep. Faith simply lays hold of the almighty power divinely provided.

390.035.110     Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(j)



**POINT 110: We stand by faith.**

**2 Corinthians 1:24** Not that we lord it over your faith, but we work with you for your joy, because it is by faith you stand firm.

By faith we enter into or appropriate to ourselves the grace of God wherein we stand.

**Romans 5:1-2** [1] Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ, [2] through whom we have gained access by faith into this grace in which we now stand. And we rejoice in the hope of the glory of God.

390.035.120 Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(k)

**POINT 120: By faith we get the victory over the world and over the evil one.**

**Ephesians 6:16** In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one.

God freely provides for us and offers to us overcoming grace in Jesus Christ. By faith we appropriate this overcoming grace to ourselves.

390.035.130 Torrey: p374, T:IV, P:1(l)

**POINT 130: We enter into rest by faith.**

**Hebrews 4:1-3** [1] Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. [2] For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard did not combine it with faith. [3] Now we who have believed enter that rest, just as God has said, "So I declared on oath in my anger, 'They shall never enter my rest.' " And yet his work has been finished since the creation of the world.

From beginning to end, at every step, salvation is by faith. God freely offers to us in Jesus Christ, a manifold salvation; forgiveness, justification, eternal life, the right to be His sons, participation in His own nature, sanctification, heart-cleansing, an indwelling Christ, keeping unto a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time, power to stand, victory over the world and the evil one, rest. We appropriate to ourselves every item in this salvation by faith. By grace are we saved through faith from first to last.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 390

---

### FAITH

#### Part 2

390.040.000     Torrey: p372, T:IV  
**Topic 40: The Results of Faith.**

390.040.010     Torrey: p372, T:IV, P:1  
**POINT 10: We are saved through faith.**

See Topic 35 above for a discussion of this Point.

390.040.020     Torrey: p375, T:IV, P:2  
**POINT 20: We receive healing through faith.**

**Matthew 9:22** Jesus turned and saw her. "Take heart, daughter," he said, "your faith has healed you." And the woman was healed from that moment.

**Matthew 9:29-30** [29] Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith will it be done to you"; [30] and their sight was restored. ...

**James 5:14-15** [14] Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. [15] And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven.

God has provided for us and offers to us physical healing and strength in Jesus Christ.

**Matthew 8:16-17** [16] When evening came, many who were demon-possessed were brought to him, and he drove out the spirits with a word and healed all the sick. [17] This was to fulfill what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah: "He took up our infirmities and carried our diseases."

We appropriate it to ourselves by faith. We miss it by our unbelief.

**Mark 6:5-6** [5] He could not do any miracles there, except lay his hands on a few sick people and heal them. [6] And he was amazed at their lack of faith. Then Jesus went around teaching from village to village.

390.040.030 Torrey: p376, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: We pass out of spiritual darkness into light by faith in Christ.**

**John 12:46** I have come into the world as a light, so that no one who believes in me should stay in darkness.

By nature we are all in darkness and children of darkness. God sends Jesus into the world to be the light of the world. **John 8:12** The light there is in Him, the light He Himself is, streams into our hearts when we believe in Him. Faith opens the window and lets the light in.

**John 12:36** Put your trust in the light while you have it, so that you may become sons of light." When he had finished speaking, Jesus left and hid himself from them.

390.040.040 Torrey: p376, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: We are delivered from all anxiety of heart by faith, faith in God and Jesus Christ.**

**John 14:1** Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me.

**Isaiah 26:3** You will keep in perfect peace him whose mind is steadfast, because he trusts in you.

390.040.050 Torrey: p376, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: We are fully and forever satisfied through faith in Jesus.**

**John 6:35** Then Jesus declared, "I am the bread of life. He who comes to me will never go hungry, and he who believes in me will never be thirsty."

God has provided for us and offers to us full satisfaction for every desire of our spirits in Jesus; by faith we appropriate this satisfaction to ourselves.

390.040.060 Torrey: p376, T:IV, P:6

**POINT 60: Through believing in Jesus Christ we rejoice greatly with joy unspeakable and full of glory.**

**1 Peter 1:8** [8] Though you have not seen him, you love him; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy,

390.040.070 Torrey: p377, T:IV, P:7

**POINT 70: Through believing in Jesus Christ we become fountains from which rivers of living water flow out.**

**John 7:38-39** [38] "Whoever believes in me, as the Scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from within him." [39] By this he meant the Spirit, whom those who believed in him were later to receive. Up to that time the Spirit had not been given, since Jesus had not yet been glorified.

This is through the Holy Spirit who is given to those who believe in Jesus Christ. God has given to the crucified, risen and glorified Jesus His Spirit for His body, the Church. We appropriate this promise of God by faith. The Spirit comes upon us and makes us fountains of living water.

**John 7:39** By this he meant the Spirit, whom those who believed in him were later to receive. Up to that time the Spirit had not been given, since Jesus had not yet been glorified.

**John 14:12** I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.

**Acts 2:33** Exalted to the right hand of God, he has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear.

390.040.080     Torrey: p377, T:IV, P:8

**POINT 80: We receive the answer to our prayers when we believe we have received.**

**Matthew 21:22** If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.

**James 1:5-7** [5] If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. [6] But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. [7] That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord;

**Mark 11:24** Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.

God is willing to answer prayer; yes, is anxious to answer prayer. But He demands, as a condition of answering, that we shall believe His naked promise and believe the prayer is heard, and that the thing asked, is ours.

390.040.090     Torrey: p378, T:IV, P:9

**POINT 90: We receive power to work wonders through faith in God and Jesus Christ.**

**Matthew 21:21** Jesus replied, "I tell you the truth, if you have faith and do not doubt, not only can you do what was done to the fig tree, but also you can say to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and it will be done.

**John 14:12** I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father.

**Hebrews 11:32-34** [32] And what more shall I say? I do not have time to tell about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets, [33] who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, and gained what was promised; who shut the mouths of lions, [34] quenched the fury of the flames, and escaped the edge of the sword; whose weakness was turned to strength; and who became powerful in battle and routed foreign armies.

**Psalms 62:11-12** [11] One thing God has spoken, two things have I heard: that you, O God, are strong, [12] and that you, O Lord, are loving. Surely you will reward each person according to what he has done.

But the power that belongs to God is at the disposal of His children. We lay hold of it by faith. God's power is the reservoir, our faith is the supply pipe; therefore, according to our faith is our experimental possession of God's power.

**Matthew 9:29-30** [29] Then he touched their eyes and said, "According to your faith will it be done to you"; [30] and their sight was restored. ...

Unbelief limits our power, or rather the inflow of God's power into us.

**Matthew 17:19-20** [19] Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and asked, "Why couldn't we drive it out?" [20] He replied, "Because you have so little faith. I tell you the truth, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you."

**John 11:40** Then Jesus said, "Did I not tell you that if you believed, you would see the glory of God?"

If we believe, we shall see the glory of God. It is our wretched unbelief that is shutting many of us out of seeing it in our own lives.

390.040.100      Torrey: p378, T:IV, P:10

**POINT 100: Through faith we receive the fulfillment of God's promises.**

**Hebrews 6:12** We do not want you to become lazy, but to imitate those who through faith and patience inherit what has been promised.

**Luke 1:45** Blessed is she who has believed that what the Lord has said to her will be accomplished!"

The actual enjoyment of God's promises is conditioned upon our belief of them. No matter how explicit a promise may be, the thing promised becomes ours only upon condition of our believing the promise.

**James 1:5-8** [5] If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. [6] But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. [7] That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; [8] he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.

The promises are for us; they are all yea and amen in Christ, but they become actually and experimentally ours only as we reach out the hand of faith and appropriate them to ourselves.

**2 Corinthians 1:20** For no matter how many promises God has made, they are "Yes" in Christ. And so through him the "Amen" is spoken by us to the glory of God.

As far as we believe we receive.

**Mark 11:24** Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.

We get what we believe for.

**Hebrews 4:1-2** [1] Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. [2] For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard did not combine it with faith.

The fulness of God's blessing is for those who claim it and insofar as they claim it.

**Joshua 1:3** I will give you every place where you set your foot, as I promised Moses.

390.040.110 Torrey: p379, T:IV, P:11

**POINT 110: All things are possible to him who believes.**

**Mark 9:23** "If you can?" said Jesus. "Everything is possible for him who believes."

We lay hold of God and His almightiness by faith. Faith can do anything God can do.

390.050.000 Torrey: p379, T:V

**Topic 50: How to get Faith.**

390.050.010 Torrey: p379, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Faith is God's gift.**

**Romans 12:3** For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the measure of faith God has given you.

**1 Corinthians 12:4, 8- 9** [4] There are different kinds of gifts, but the same Spirit. [8] To one there is given through the Spirit the message of wisdom, ... [9] to another faith by the same Spirit, ...

**1 Corinthians 2:4-5** [4] My message and my preaching were not with wise and persuasive words, but with a demonstration of the Spirit's power, [5] so that your faith might not rest on men's wisdom, but on God's power.

Like all of God's gifts it is at the disposal of all who wish it, for there is no respect of persons with Him. We shall see directly that it is given through a certain instrument that is within reach of all, and upon certain conditions that any of us can fulfill.

390.050.020 Torrey: p380, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: The Word of God is the instrument God has appointed for, and that he uses in, imparting faith.**

**Romans 10:17** Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ.

**Acts 4:4** But many who heard the message believed, and the number of men grew to about five thousand.

This is true of Saving Faith. When Paul and Silas told the Philippian jailer to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and he would be saved, they immediately proceeded to speak the word of the Lord to him.

**Acts 16:31-32** [31] They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved -- you and your household." [32] Then they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house.

It is true of the faith that prevails in prayer. If we wish to believe that our prayer is heard we should search the promises of God and just rest our faith on them. Feeding upon the Word makes a mighty man of prayer.

It is true of faith in all its aspects. Faith comes through the Word and grows by feeding upon the Word. If we wish others to have faith we should give them the Word of God.

**2 Timothy 3:14-15** [14] But as for you, continue in what you have learned and have become convinced of, because you know those from whom you learned it, [15] and how from infancy you have known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith in Christ Jesus.

**James 1:21** Therefore, get rid of all moral filth and the evil that is so prevalent and humbly accept the word planted in you, which can save you.

**John 20:31** But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.

No amount of praying for faith will bring it if we neglect faith's proper nourishment, the Word of God, any more than praying for physical health and strength will bring it if we neglect wholesome food and live on mince pie and candy.

390.050.030      Torrey: p380, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Faith is the work of the Holy Spirit.**

**Galatians 5:22** [22] But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness,

It is part of the fruit of the Spirit. The Word is the instrument by which it is produced, but it is the Word carried home, and made a living thing in the heart by the Holy Spirit's power.

390.050.040      Torrey: p380, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: Jesus is the author and finisher of our faith.**

**Hebrews 12:2** Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

390.050.050      Torrey: p381, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: If we want to have faith we must fix our eyes upon the promise of God.**

**Romans 4:19-21** [19] Without weakening in his faith, he faced the fact that his body was as good as dead -- since he was about a hundred years old -- and that Sarah's womb was also dead. [20] Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, [21] being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

If we wish another to have faith we must hold up the promise of God before him, and holds his attention to it.

390.050.060      Torrey: p381, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: We should pray for Faith.**

**Luke 11:9, 11, 13** [9] So I say to you: Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. [11] Which of you fathers, if your son asks for a fish, will give him a snake instead? [13] If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your



children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!

**Mark 9:24** Immediately the boy's father exclaimed, "I do believe; help me overcome my unbelief!"

**Luke 22:32** But I have prayed for you, Simon, that your faith may not fail. And when you have turned back, strengthen your brothers.

As already seen, faith is God's gift. He bestows His gifts in answer to prayer. It is the Holy Spirit's work, and the Holy Spirit is given in answer to prayer. Prayer is an expression of our helplessness and dependence upon God.

390.050.070      Torrey: p381, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: If we wish more faith we should use the faith we have.**

**Matthew 25:29** For everyone who has will be given more, and he will have an abundance. Whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken from him.

390.050.080      Torrey: p381, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: A great hindrance to faith is seeking glory from men and not the glory that comes from God only.**

**John 5:44** How can you believe if you accept praise from one another, yet make no effort to obtain the praise that comes from the only God?

This and all hindrances must be put away if we would have faith.

390.050.090      Torrey: p381, T:V, P:9

**POINT 90: If we would have faith we must look to Jesus.**

**Hebrews 12:2** Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Peter's faith failed when he took his eyes off of Jesus and began to look at the wind and waves.

**Matthew 14:30-31** [30] But when he saw the wind, he was afraid and, beginning to sink, cried out, "Lord, save me!" [31] Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him. "You of little faith," he said, "why did you doubt?"

390.050.100      Torrey: p382, T:V, P:10

**POINT 100: If we are to have faith we must follow Jesus.**

**John 8:12** When Jesus spoke again to the people, he said, "I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness, but will have the light of life."

The more closely we follow Him the more our faith will grow. Those who follow most closely in the footsteps of Christ have the most faith. When Peter began to follow Christ "afar off" his faith failed rapidly. The more of Christlike denial of self and of true cross-bearing and humility there is in our lives the more our faith will grow. Faith cannot flourish in an atmosphere of self-indulgence, self-will and pride. Selfishness and faith cannot walk together. They are not agreed.

390.060.000 Torrey: p382, T:VI

**Topic 60: The Relation of Faith and Repentance to each other.**

390.060.005 Torrey: p382, T:VI, P:General

**POINT 5: True Repentance and Faith are inseparable. They are mutually dependent upon each other.**

390.060.010 Torrey: p382, T:VI, P:1

**POINT 10: Believing the Word of God leads to repentance.**

**Acts 11:19, 21** [19] Now those who had been scattered by the persecution in connection with Stephen traveled as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus and Antioch, telling the message only to Jews. [21] The Lord's hand was with them, and a great number of people believed and turned to the Lord.

**Matthew 3:1-2, 6** [1] In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the Desert of Judea [2] and saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near." [6] Confessing their sins, they were baptized by him in the Jordan River.

**Acts 2:37, 41** [37] When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?" [38] Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. [39] The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off -- for all whom the Lord our God will call." [40] With many other words he warned them; and he pleaded with them, "Save yourselves from this corrupt generation." [41] Those who accepted his message were baptized, and about three thousand were added to their number that day.

390.060.020 Torrey: p383, T:VI, P:2

**POINT 20: The principal element in evangelical repentance is a change of mind about Christ; a change from an unbelieving and rejecting attitude to a believing and accepting attitude.**

**Acts 2:36-38** [36] "Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ." [37] When the people heard this, they were cut to the heart and said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brothers, what shall we do?" [38] Peter replied, "Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.

390.060.030 Torrey: p383, T:VI, P:3

**POINT 30: There must be a repentance from the attitude of mind that seeks the glory that comes from man, to the attitude that seeks the glory that comes from God, in order to believe in Christ.**

**John 5:44** How can you believe if you accept praise from one another, yet make no effort to obtain the praise that comes from the only God?

390.060.040 Torrey: p383, T:VI, P:4

**POINT 40: True Faith in Christ involves the confession and forsaking of sin.**

**Acts 19:18-19** [18] Many of those who believed now came and openly confessed their evil deeds. [19] A number who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls together and burned them publicly. When they calculated the value of the scrolls, the total came to fifty thousand drachmas.

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 400

---

400.000.000      Torrey: p384

### LOVE TO GOD

400.010.000      Torrey: p384, T:I

**Topic 10: Its Importance**

400.010.010      Torrey: p384, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: To love God with all the heart and with all the soul, and all the mind is the first and great commandment.**

**Matthew 22:37-38** [37] Jesus replied: " `Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.' [38] This is the first and greatest commandment.

**Mark 12:29-34** [29] "The most important one," answered Jesus, "is this: `Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. [30] Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength.' [31] The second is this: `Love your neighbor as yourself.' There is no commandment greater than these." [32] "Well said, teacher," the man replied. "You are right in saying that God is one and there is no other but him. [33] To love him with all your heart, with all your understanding and with all your strength, and to love your neighbor as yourself is more important than all burnt offerings and sacrifices." [34] When Jesus saw that he had answered wisely, he said to him, "You are not far from the kingdom of God." And from then on no one dared ask him any more questions.

**Deuteronomy 10:12** [12] And now, O Israel, what does the LORD your God ask of you but to fear the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, to love him, to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, [13] and to observe the LORD's commands and decrees that I am giving you today for your own good?

400.020.000      Torrey: p384, T:II

**Topic 20: How Love to God is Manifested.**

400.020.010      Torrey: p385, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: The supreme manifestation of love to God is keeping His commandments.**

**Exodus 20:5-6** [5] You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth

generation of those who hate me, [6] but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.

**2 John 1:6** And this is love: that we walk in obedience to his commands. As you have heard from the beginning, his command is that you walk in love.

**1 John 5:3** [3] This is love for God: to obey his commands. And his commands are not burdensome, [4] for everyone born of God overcomes the world. This is the victory that has overcome the world, even our faith.

This is love to God. Keeping God's commandments is more than merely obeying God's commandments. The word translated "keep," expresses watchful care. It means to "attend to carefully," "take care of," "guard." So also the Old Testament word.

400.020.020     Torrey: p385, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Love to God is manifested by serving Him with all the heart and all the soul.**

**Deuteronomy 10:12** [12] And now, O Israel, what does the LORD your God ask of you but to fear the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, to love him, to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul,

Paul in writing to the Thessalonians speaks of their "labor of love." The word for "labor" denotes "intense" labor, "toil." The one who loves God will labor intensely for Him. An easy-going Christian life proves an absence of love for God.

400.020.030     Torrey: p385, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: Love to God manifests itself in a hatred of evil.**

**Psalms 97:10** Let those who love the LORD hate evil, for he guards the lives of his faithful ones and delivers them from the hand of the wicked.

The man who loves God cannot regard sin with favor or indifference. He hates it. All sin. There is no small sin to him.

400.020.040     Torrey: p385, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Love to God manifests itself in not loving the world.**

**1 John 2:15** Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

The man who loves God cannot set his affections upon the world with its gain and its honor, and its pleasure, and its gratifications. All that is in the world is not of the Father, it draws away from Him, and a lover of God cannot love it.

400.020.050     Torrey: p385, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: Love to God is manifested by a love to God's children, our brethren.**

**1 John 4:20-21** [20] If anyone says, "I love God," yet hates his brother, he is a liar. For anyone who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen. [21] And he has given us this command: Whoever loves God must also love his brother.

400.030.000     Torrey: p386, T:III

## Topic 30: Results of Love to God under the Old Covenant.

400.030.010 Torrey: p386, T:III, P:(1)Prop

### **POINT 10: The blessings and promises under the Old Covenant were for those who loved God.**

**Deuteronomy 5:9-10** [9] You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, [10] but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.

**Deuteronomy 7:9** Know therefore that the LORD your God is God; he is the faithful God, keeping his covenant of love to a thousand generations of those who love him and keep his commands.

**Exodus 20:5-6** [5] You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, [6] but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.

**Psalms 69:34-36** [34] Let heaven and earth praise him, the seas and all that move in them, [35] for God will save Zion and rebuild the cities of Judah. Then people will settle there and possess it; [36] the children of his servants will inherit it, and those who love his name will dwell there.

**Psalms 91:14** "Because he loves me," says the LORD, "I will rescue him; I will protect him, for he acknowledges my name."

**Psalms 145:20** The LORD watches over all who love him, but all the wicked he will destroy.

**Isaiah 56:6-7** [6] And foreigners who bind themselves to the LORD to serve him, to love the name of the LORD, and to worship him, all who keep the Sabbath without desecrating it and who hold fast to my covenant -- [7] these I will bring to my holy mountain and give them joy in my house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be accepted on my altar; for my house will be called a house of prayer for all nations."

400.035.000 Torrey: p386, T:III

## Topic 35: Results of Love to God Under the New Covenant

400.035.010 Torrey: p386, T:III, P:1

### **POINT 10: God knows those who love Him.**

**1 Corinthians 8:3** But the man who loves God is known by God.

400.035.020 Torrey: p386, T:III, P:2

### **POINT 20: The Crown of Life is for those who love God.**

**James 1:12** Blessed is the man who perseveres under trial, because when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of life that God has promised to those who love him.

400.035.030 Torrey: p386, T:III, P:3

### **POINT 30: The Kingdom is promised to those who love God.**

**James 2:5** Listen, my dear brothers: Has not God chosen those who are poor in the eyes of the

world to be rich in faith and to inherit the kingdom he promised those who love him?

400.035.040 Torrey: p387, T:III, P:4

**POINT 40: God has prepared for those who love Him things greater than those which man has seen or heard, or which have entered into man's heart -- deep things which the Spirit alone searches and reveals.**

**1 Corinthians 2:9-10** [9] However, as it is written: "No eye has seen, no ear has heard, no mind has conceived what God has prepared for those who love him" -- [10] but God has revealed it to us by his Spirit. The Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God.

400.035.050 Torrey: p387, T:III, P:5

**POINT 50: All things work together for good for those who love God.**

**Romans 8:28** And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose.

400.035.060 Torrey: p387, T:III, P:6

**POINT 60: Those who love God are "the called according to his purpose", "foreknown", "foreordained to be conformed to the image of His Son", "justified", "glorified."**

**Romans 8:28-30** [28] And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose. [29] For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the likeness of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers. [30] And those he predestined, he also called; those he called, he also justified; those he justified, he also glorified.

400.040.000 Torrey: p387, T:IV

**Topic 40: How to Get Love to God.**

400.040.010 Torrey: p387, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: We got love to God by being born of God.**

**1 John 4:7** Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God.

We are not saved *by* loving God, we are saved *to* loving God.

400.040.020 Torrey: p387, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: We get love to God by believing in and meditating upon His love to us.**

**1 John 4:19** We love because he first loved us.

400.040.030 Torrey: p387, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: God, in answer to prayer, directs our hearts into the Love of God.**

**2 Thessalonians 3:5** May the Lord direct your hearts into God's love and Christ's perseverance.

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 410

---

410.000.000      Torrey: p388

### LOVE TO CHRIST

410.010.000      Torrey: p388, T:I

**Topic 10: Its Importance**

410.010.010      Torrey: p388, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: Supreme love to Christ is the condition of Christian discipleship.**

**Matthew 10:35-38** [35] For I have come to turn "a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law -- [36] a man's enemies will be the members of his own household.' [37] "Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; [38] and anyone who does not take his cross and follow me is not worthy of me.

**Luke 14:26** If anyone comes to me and does not hate his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters -- yes, even his own life -- he cannot be my disciple.

(Note: This is a poor translation in the King James Version that has persisted in other translations. The Greek word translated "hate" in this passage actually means "love less." Hence, this passage should read:

"If anyone comes to me and does not love his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters -- yes, even his own life -- less [than he loves me] he cannot be my disciple.")

Christ in the New Testament claims the same supreme love for Himself that Jehovah in the Old Testament claims for Himself. Here is undoubted proof of the Divinity of Christ. Unless Christ has a place in our hearts above father, mother, wife, children, brothers, sisters, yea, and his own life, we cannot be his disciples.

410.010.010      Torrey: p388, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: Love to Christ (though we do not see Him) is an unfailing mark of the elect.**

**1 Peter 1:8** [8] Though you have not seen him, you love him; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and glorious joy,



410.010.010 Torrey: p388, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: If we are children of God we will love Christ.**

**John 8:42** Jesus said to them, "If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now am here. I have not come on my own; but he sent me.

Absence of love to Christ is decisive proof that one is not a child of God.

410.010.010 Torrey: p389, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: Any one who does not love Christ will be Anathema at the coming of Christ, i.e., "devoted without hope of being redeemed", "doomed to destruction."**

**1 Corinthians 16:22** If anyone does not love the Lord -- a curse be on him. Come, O Lord!

410.020.000 Torrey: p389, T:II

**Topic 20: How Love to Christ is Manifested**

410.020.010 Torrey: p389, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Love to Christ is manifested by keeping His words and commandments. (The same thing that is said elsewhere of love to God.)**

**John 14:15, 21, 23** [15] "If you love me, you will obey what I command. [21] Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I too will love him and show myself to him." [23] Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him.

410.020.020 Torrey: p389, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Love to Christ is manifested by our not living for ourselves, but for Him who died and rose again for our sakes.**

**2 Corinthians 5:14-15** [14] For Christ's love compels us, because we are convinced that one died for all, and therefore all died. [15] And he died for all, that those who live should no longer live for themselves but for him who died for them and was raised again.

410.020.030 Torrey: p389, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: Love to Christ is manifested by feeding His lambs and shepherding His sheep.**

**John 21:15-17** [15] When they had finished eating, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon son of John, do you truly love me more than these?" "Yes, Lord," he said, "you know that I love you." Jesus said, "Feed my lambs." [16] Again Jesus said, "Simon son of John, do you truly love me?" He answered, "Yes, Lord, you know that I love you." Jesus said, "Take care of my sheep." [17] The third time he said to him, "Simon son of John, do you love me?" Peter was hurt because Jesus asked him the third time, "Do you love me?" He said, "Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you." Jesus said, "Feed my sheep.

410.020.040 Torrey: p390, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Love to Christ is manifested by ministering to Him.**

**Luke 7:44-47** [44] Then he turned toward the woman and said to Simon, "Do you see this woman? I came into your house. You did not give me any water for my feet, but she wet my feet with her tears and wiped them with her hair. [45] You did not give me a kiss, but this woman, from the time

I entered, has not stopped kissing my feet. [46] You did not put oil on my head, but she has poured perfume on my feet. [47] Therefore, I tell you, her many sins have been forgiven -- for she loved much. But he who has been forgiven little loves little."

How can we?

**Matthew 25:40** The King will reply, "I tell you the truth, whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of mine, you did for me."

410.020.050 Torrey: p390, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: Love to Christ is manifested by counting all things but loss and gladly sacrificing them for His sake.**

**Philippians 3:7-8** [7] But whatever was to my profit I now consider loss for the sake of Christ. [8] What is more, I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ [9] and be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ -- the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith.

410.020.060 Torrey: p390, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: Love to Christ is manifested by a willingness to suffer and to die for His name.**

**Acts 21:13** Then Paul answered, "Why are you weeping and breaking my heart? I am ready not only to be bound, but also to die in Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus."

410.020.070 Torrey: p390, T:II, P:7

**POINT 70: Love to Christ manifests itself in a desire to be with Christ.**

**2 Corinthians 5:8** We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord.

410.020.080 Torrey: p391, T:II, P:8

**POINT 80: Love to Christ manifests itself in a longing for His appearing.**

**2 Timothy 4:8** Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day -- and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

**Revelation 22:20** [20] He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus.

410.030.000 Torrey: p391, T:III

**Topic 30: Results of Love to Christ**

410.030.010 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: There is grace for all who love Jesus Christ in sincerity.**

**Ephesians 6:24** Grace to all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love.

410.030.020 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:2(a)

**POINT 20: Those who love Christ are loved by the Father.**

**John 14:21** Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I too will love him and show myself to him."

**John 14:23** Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him.

God loves all men, but he has an especial love for those who love His Son.

Compare **John 17:23** I in them and you in me. May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me.

410.030.030 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:2(b)

**POINT 30: Those who love Christ are loved by Christ.**

**John 14:21-23** [21] Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I too will love him and show myself to him." [22] Then Judas (not Judas Iscariot) said, "But, Lord, why do you intend to show yourself to us and not to the world?" [23] Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him.

410.030.040 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:2(c)

**POINT 40: Christ manifests Himself to those who love Him.**

**John 14:15-16, 23** [15] "If you love me, you will obey what I command. [16] And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever -- [23] Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him.

**John 16:14** He will bring glory to me by taking from what is mine and making it known to you.

410.030.050 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:2(d)

**POINT 50: The Father and Christ make their abode with those who love Christ.**

**John 14:23** Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. My Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him.

410.030.060 Torrey: p391, T:III, P:3

**POINT 60: The Father's gift of the Holy Spirit as the Paraclete to abide with and be in us, is for those who love Christ.**

**John 14:15-17** [15] "If you love me, you will obey what I command. [16] And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever -- [17] the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you.

410.030.070 Torrey: p392, T:III, P:4

**POINT 70: At His coming the Lord will give a crown of righteousness to all who love His appearing.**

**2 Timothy 4:8** Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the

righteous Judge, will award to me on that day -- and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

410.040.000      Torrey: p392, T:IV

## Topic 40: How Can We Attain unto Love Christ?

410.040.010      Torrey: p392, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: Love to Christ arises from a realization of our sin and from faith in the wondrous pardoning love of Christ.**

**Luke 7:47-50** [47] Therefore, I tell you, her many sins have been forgiven -- for she loved much. But he who has been forgiven little loves little." [48] Then Jesus said to her, "Your sins are forgiven." [49] The other guests began to say among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?" [50] Jesus said to the woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

**1 Timothy 1:12-15** [12] I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has given me strength, that he considered me faithful, appointing me to his service. [13] Even though I was once a blasphemer and a persecutor and a violent man, I was shown mercy because I acted in ignorance and unbelief. [14] The grace of our Lord was poured out on me abundantly, along with the faith and love that are in Christ Jesus. [15] Here is a trustworthy saying that deserves full acceptance: Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners -- of whom I am the worst.

**Galatians 2:20** I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

**1 John 4:10** This is love: not that we loved God, but that he loved us and sent his Son as an atoning sacrifice for our sins.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 420

---

420.000.000      Torrey: p393

### LOVE TO MAN

420.010.000      Torrey: p393, T:I

**Topic 10: What is Love?**

420.010.010      Torrey: p393, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10:**

**Matthew 5:43-47** [43] "You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' [44] But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, [45] that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous. [46] If you love those who love you, what reward will you get? Are not even the tax collectors doing that? [47] And if you greet only your brothers, what are you doing more than others? Do not even pagans do that?

**1 John 3:14, 16-17** [14] We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death. [16] This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers. [17] If anyone has material possessions and sees his brother in need but has no pity on him, how can the love of God be in him?

Love for another is a desire for and delight in their good. Love is not mere fondness for another nor pleasure in their society. The character of another may be hateful to me, and his society disagreeable, but still a real desire for his welfare is love.

420.020.000      Torrey: p393, T:II

**Topic 20: The Objects of Christian Love**

420.020.010      Torrey: p393, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: We should love the brethren, those born of God, all saints.**

**1 Peter 2:17** Show proper respect to everyone: Love the brotherhood of believers, fear God, honor the king.

**Ephesians 1:15** [15] For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and

your love for all the saints, [16] I have not stopped giving thanks for you, remembering you in my prayers.

While, as we shall see, a Christian should love all men, he should and will have a peculiar love for God's children.

Compare **Galatians 6:10** Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.

420.020.020 Torrey: p394, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: We should love our neighbor.**

**Matthew 19:19** [18] ... Jesus replied, " ... [19] ... 'love your neighbor as yourself.'"

**Matthew 22:39** And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.'

Who is our neighbor?

**Luke 10:29-37** [29] But he wanted to justify himself, so he asked Jesus, "And who is my neighbor?" [30] In reply Jesus said: "A man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho, when he fell into the hands of robbers. They stripped him of his clothes, beat him and went away, leaving him half dead. [31] A priest happened to be going down the same road, and when he saw the man, he passed by on the other side. [32] So too, a Levite, when he came to the place and saw him, passed by on the other side. [33] But a Samaritan, as he traveled, came where the man was; and when he saw him, he took pity on him. [34] He went to him and bandaged his wounds, pouring on oil and wine. Then he put the man on his own donkey, took him to an inn and took care of him. [35] The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the innkeeper. 'Look after him,' he said, 'and when I return, I will reimburse you for any extra expense you may have.' [36] "Which of these three do you think was a neighbor to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?" [37] The expert in the law replied, "The one who had mercy on him." Jesus told him, "Go and do likewise."

420.020.030 Torrey: p394, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: We should love all men.**

**1 Thessalonians 3:12** May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you.

420.020.040 Torrey: p394, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: We should love our enemies.**

**Matthew 5:44** [44] But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,

Enemies are specialized because they are the ones whom we would be least likely to love.

How shall we show our love to our enemies? The remainder of the verse shows. See also:

**Romans 12:20** On the contrary: "If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him something to drink. In doing this, you will heap burning coals on his head."

QUESTION: Doesn't the Bible teach that Satan and his angels are our enemies? Does this mean that we should love them?

ANSWER: Satan is our enemy, but we should not love him, as we should love human enemies, for there is one crucial difference. Each man will not be judged, and perhaps condemned, until the end of his life. During his life there is still a possibility that our love may be the love that saves a human sinner. Also, we cannot see inside another man's heart. The person we perceive as not worthy of our love may in fact not be the sinner we believe him to be. On the other hand, Satan and his minions *already are* condemned. They are enemies of God and beyond redemption.

420.020.050      Torrey: p395, T:II, P:5

**POINT 50: Husbands should love their wives.**

**Ephesians 5:25** Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her

The husband has an especial duty of love toward his wife. The doctrine that a husband should have no more interest in the welfare of his wife than in that of any other woman is totally unscriptural. While Christ has a love for all men, He has an altogether especial love for the Church, and so the Christian husband should love all, but have an altogether special and unique love for his wife.

420.020.060      Torrey: p395, T:II, P:6

**POINT 60: Wives should love their husbands.**

**Titus 2:4-5** [4] Then they can train the younger women to love their husbands and children, [5] to be self-controlled and pure, to be busy at home, to be kind, and to be subject to their husbands, so that no one will malign the word of God.

420.030.000      Torrey: p395, T:III

**Topic 30: How Should We Love?**

420.030.010      Torrey: p395, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: We should love in Christ Jesus.**

**1 Corinthians 16:24** My love to all of you in Christ Jesus. Amen.

Christ Jesus is the author of our love. It is for His sake we love. Our special love to the brethren is because of their special relation to Him.

420.030.020      Torrey: p395, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: We should love without hypocrisy. Our love should be genuine, unfeigned.**

**Romans 12:9** Love must be sincere. Hate what is evil; cling to what is good.

Much professed love is a mere pretense. Much calling of one another "brother" is the hollownest formalism and sham.

420.030.030      Torrey: p395, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: We should not love merely in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth; not in saying, but in doing; not in professing, but in practice.**

**1 John 3:18** Dear children, let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth.

420.030.040      Torrey: p396, T:III, P:4



**POINT 40: We should love from the heart, fervently - rather, "intensely."**

**1 Peter 4:8** Above all, love each other deeply, because love covers over a multitude of sins.

**1 Peter 1:22** Now that you have purified yourselves by obeying the truth so that you have sincere love for your brothers, love one another deeply, from the heart.

420.030.050 Torrey: p396, T:III, P:5

**POINT 50: We should love with abundance.**

**Philippians 1:9-11** [9] And this is my prayer: that your love may abound more and more in knowledge and depth of insight, [10] so that you may be able to discern what is best and may be pure and blameless until the day of Christ, [11] filled with the fruit of righteousness that comes through Jesus Christ - - to the glory and praise of God.

**1 Thessalonians 3:12** May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you.

420.030.060 Torrey: p396, T:III, P:6

**POINT 60: We should love our neighbor as ourself.**

**Matthew 19:19** honor your father and mother,' and 'love your neighbor as yourself.'"

**Romans 13:9** The commandments, "Do not commit adultery," "Do not murder," "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: "Love your neighbor as yourself."

**Galatians 5:14** The entire law is summed up in a single command: "Love your neighbor as yourself."

420.030.070 Torrey: p396, T:III, P:7

**POINT 70: We should love the brethren, even as Christ loved us.**

**John 13:34** A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.

**John 15:12-13** [12] My command is this: Love each other as I have loved you. [13] Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends.

**1 John 3:16** This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers.

420.040.000 Torrey: p397, T:IV

**Topic 40: How Love is Manifested**

420.040.010 Torrey: p397, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: Love is manifested by abstaining from everything that would injure another.**

**Romans 13:10** Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.

"Love works no ill." There is much here for reflection. The applications are countless.

420.040.020 Torrey: p397, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: Love is manifested by doing good when we have the opportunity.**

**Galatians 6:10** Therefore, as we have opportunity, let us do good to all people, especially to those who belong to the family of believers.

Love is not merely negative -- abstaining from doing injury, it is positive, doing positive good.

420.040.030 Torrey: p397, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: Love is manifested by becoming a servant to others.**

**Galatians 5:13** You, my brothers, were called to be free. But do not use your freedom to indulge the sinful nature; rather, serve one another in love.

This is illustrated in Jesus Christ:

**John 13:1-5** [1] It was just before the Passover Feast. Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love. [2] The evening meal was being served, and the devil had already prompted Judas Iscariot, son of Simon, to betray Jesus. [3] Jesus knew that the Father had put all things under his power, and that he had come from God and was returning to God; [4] so he got up from the meal, took off his outer clothing, and wrapped a towel around his waist. [5] After that, he poured water into a basin and began to wash his disciples' feet, drying them with the towel that was wrapped around him.

**Philippians 2:4-7** [4] Each of you should look not only to your own interests, but also to the interests of others. [5] Your attitude should be the same as that of Christ Jesus: [6] Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, [7] but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness.

The man who wishes to be served but will not serve does not love. Love seeks lowly places of service.

420.040.040 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: Love is manifested by our not seeking our own, but our neighbor's good.**

**1 Corinthians 10:24** Nobody should seek his own good, but the good of others.

420.040.050 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: Love is manifested by our not looking after (or caring for, having regard for) our own things, but for the things of others.**

**Philippians 2:4** Each of you should look not only to your own interests, but also to the interests of others.

420.040.060 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:6

**POINT 60: Love is manifested by our bearing one another's burdens.**

**Galatians 6:2** Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfill the law of Christ.

420.040.070 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:7(a)

**POINT 70: Love is manifested by our bearing the infirmities of the weak.**

**Romans 15:1-3** [1] We who are strong ought to bear with the failings of the weak and not to please ourselves. [2] Each of us should please his neighbor for his good, to build him up. [3] For even Christ did not please himself but, as it is written: "The insults of those who insult you have fallen on me."

Christ is the great example here also.

420.040.080 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:7(b)

**POINT 80: Love is manifested by our bearing not pleasing ourselves.**

**2 Corinthians 2:7-8** [7] Now instead, you ought to forgive and comfort him, so that he will not be overwhelmed by excessive sorrow. [8] I urge you, therefore, to reaffirm your love for him.

In this particular instance the man had gone deeply into sin, the vilest sin.

420.040.090 Torrey: p398, T:IV, P:7(c)

**POINT 90: Love is manifested by our pleasing others for that which is good unto edifying.**

**Galatians 6:1** Brothers, if someone is caught in a sin, you who are spiritual should restore him gently. But watch yourself, or you also may be tempted.

420.040.100 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:8

**POINT 100: Love is manifested by forgiving and comforting the wayward.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:14** And we urge you, brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, be patient with everyone.

420.040.110 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:9

**POINT 110: Love is manifested by restoring in a spirit of meekness the one overtaken in any trespass.**

**Romans 14:15, 21** [15] If your brother is distressed because of what you eat, you are no longer acting in love. Do not by your eating destroy your brother for whom Christ died. [21] It is better not to eat meat or drink wine or to do anything else that will cause your brother to fall.

420.040.120 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:10(a)

**POINT 120: Love is manifested by admonishing the disorderly.**

**Romans 14:19** Let us therefore make every effort to do what leads to peace and to mutual edification.

420.040.130 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:10(b)

**POINT 130: Love is manifested by encouraging the faint-hearted.**

**Romans 12:15** Rejoice with those who rejoice; mourn with those who mourn.

420.040.140 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:10(c)

**POINT 140: Love is manifested by supporting the weak.**

**Luke 6:35** But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get

anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked.

Lend and keep on lending, hoping against hope.

420.040.150 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:10(d)

**POINT 150: Love is manifested by being long-suffering toward all.**

**Ephesians 4:2** Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.

420.040.160 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:11

**POINT 160: Love is manifested by avoiding that which causes a brother to stumble.**

**Ephesians 4:32** Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

420.040.170 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:12

**POINT 170: Love is manifested by following after the things which make for peace and things whereby one may edify another.**

**Romans 14:19** Let us therefore make every effort to do what leads to peace and to mutual edification.

420.040.180 Torrey: p399, T:IV, P:13

**POINT 180: Love is manifested by rejoicing with those who rejoice and weeping with those who weep.**

**Romans 12:15** Rejoice with those who rejoice; mourn with those who mourn.

420.040.190 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:14

**POINT 190: Love is manifested by lending, never despairing.**

**Luke 6:35** But love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful and wicked.

420.040.200 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:15

**POINT 200: Love is manifested by forbearing one another, i.e., suffering wrong and ill without vengeance and retaliation; overcoming evil with good.**

**Ephesians 4:2** Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love.

420.040.210 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:16(a)- (b)

**POINT 210: Love is manifested by being kind, being tender-hearted.**

**Ephesians 4:32** Be kind and compassionate to one another, ....

420.040.220 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:16(c)

**POINT 220: Love is manifested by forgiving one another even as God in Christ forgave us.**

**Ephesians 4:32** Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you.

420.040.230 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:17

**POINT 230: Love is manifested by giving of our means to meet another's need.**

**2 Corinthians 8:24** Therefore show these men the proof of your love and the reason for our pride in you, so that the churches can see it.

**1 John 3:17** If anyone has material possessions and sees his brother in need but has no pity on him, how can the love of God be in him?

420.040.240 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:18(a)

**POINT 240: Love is manifested by being kindly affectionate one toward another.**

**Romans 12:10** Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Honor one another above yourselves.

It is easy to do this in little conventionalities, as e.g., in the matter of passing through a door first; but do we do it in the really important affairs of life?

420.040.250 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:18(b)

**POINT 250: Love is manifested by seeking the higher place for someone else, the lower place for oneself.**

See **Romans 12:10** above.

420.040.260 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(a)

**POINT 260: Love is manifested by being long-suffering.**

Note: Points 260 through 400 are all supported by this verse:

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [4] Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. [5] It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. [6] Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. [7] It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. [8] Love never fails. ...

420.040.270 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(b)

**POINT 270: Love is manifested by being kind.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4** ... love is kind. ...

420.040.280 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(c)

**POINT 280: Love is manifested by not envying.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4** Love ... does not envy, ...

420.040.290 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(d)

**POINT 290: Love is manifested by not bragging about oneself, gloating, swaggering.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [4] Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. [5] It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs.

420.040.300 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(e)

**POINT 300: Love is manifested by not being puffed up, conceited, selfish.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [4] Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. [5] It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. [6] Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth.

420.040.310 Torrey: p400, T:IV, P:19(f)

**POINT 310: Love is manifested by not behaving unseemly.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [5] It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. [6] Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. [7] It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres.

420.040.320 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(g)

**POINT 320: Love is manifested by not seeking our own.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [5] ... it is not self-seeking ...

420.040.330 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(h)

**POINT 330: Love is manifested by being slow to anger.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [5] ... it is not easily angered ...

Some people teach that one should never become angry, indeed, that it is a sin. In fact, the Bible teaches that we *should* be angered by iniquity. Jesus became *angered* by the Temple money changers who insisted on charging a fee to convert secular money to "temple money" or for special gifts, e.g., sin offerings and grain offerings.

**Matthew 21:12-13** [13] Jesus entered the temple area and drove out all who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers and the benches of those selling doves. [13] "It is written," he said to them, " 'My house will be called a house of prayer,' but you are making it a 'den of robbers.'"

**John 2:13-16** [13] When it was almost time for the Jewish Passover, Jesus went up to Jerusalem. [14] In the temple courts he found men selling cattle, sheep and doves, and others sitting at tables exchanging money. [15] So he made a whip out of cords, and drove all from the temple area, both sheep and cattle; he scattered the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables. [16] To those who sold doves he said, "Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father's house into a market!"

420.040.340 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(i)

**POINT 340: Love is manifested by not keeping a record of wrongs.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [5] ... it keeps no record of wrongs.

This does not mean that iniquity should be *ignored*. It has often been said that "The only thing needed for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing." The Bible says "Spare the rod and spoil the child." But there is a difference between combating iniquity and not letting go of prior wrongs.

420.040.350 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(j)

**POINT 350: Love is manifested by not rejoicing in unrighteousness.**

**1 Corinthians 13:6** Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth.

420.040.360 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(k)

**POINT 360: Love is manifested by rejoicing in the truth.**

**1 Corinthians 13:6** Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth.

420.040.370 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(l)

**POINT 370: Love is manifested by bearing all things.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [4] Love is patient, love is kind. It does not envy, it does not boast, it is not proud. [5] It is not rude, it is not self-seeking, it is not easily angered, it keeps no record of wrongs. [6] Love does not delight in evil but rejoices with the truth. [7] It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres. [8] Love never fails. ...

420.040.380 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(m)

**POINT 380: Love is manifested by trust.**

**1 Corinthians 13:7** It ... always trusts ...

420.040.390 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(n)

**POINT 390: Love is manifested by hoping all things.**

**1 Corinthians 13:4-8** [7] It always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always perseveres.

420.040.400 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:19(o)

**POINT 400: Love is manifested by persevering.**

**1 Corinthians 13:7-8** [7] It ... always perseveres. [8] Love never fails. ...

420.040.410 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:20(a)

**POINT 410: For a personal wrong, love is manifested by rebuking the person first privately, then before a witness if necessary, and if necessary before the church.**

**Leviticus 19:17** Do not hate your brother in your heart. Rebuke your neighbor frankly so you will not share in his guilt.

**Proverbs 27:5** Better is open rebuke than hidden love.

**Ephesians 5:11** Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them.

**Matthew 18:15-17** [15] "If your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault, just between the two of you. If he listens to you, you have won your brother over. [16] But if he will not listen, take one or two others along, so that every matter may be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses.' [17] If he refuses to listen to them, tell it to the church; and if he refuses to listen even to the church, treat him as you would a pagan or a tax collector.

420.040.420 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:20(b)

**POINT 420: For a public wrong, love is manifested by reproving the offender in the sight of all.**

**1 Timothy 5:20** Those who sin are to be rebuked publicly, so that the others may take warning.



Note that this public reproof is by an elder.

420.040.430 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:20(c)

**POINT 430: Love is manifested by reproofing sharply when necessary.**

**Titus 1:12-13** [12] Even one of their own prophets has said, "Cretans are always liars, evil brutes, lazy gluttons." [13] This testimony is true. Therefore, rebuke them sharply, so that they will be sound in the faith

420.040.440 Torrey: p401, T:IV, P:21

**POINT 440: Love for others is manifested by praying for them. There is no way in which we can do more for them.**

**Matthew 5:44** But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,

420.040.450 Torrey: p402, T:IV, P:22

**POINT 420: Love to the children of God is manifested by loving the offender God Himself and doing His commandments.**

**1 John 5:2** This is how we know that we love the children of God: by loving God and carrying out his commands.

420.040.460 Torrey: p402, T:IV, P:23

**POINT 460: Love to the brethren is manifested by our laying down our lives for them.**

**John 15:13** Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends.

**1 John 3:16** This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers.

The manifestations of love specifically mentioned in the Bible are very numerous. As one goes over these he begins to see how love covers every duty to every class of men, and how true it is, as Paul says:

**Romans 13:10** Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.

420.050.000 Torrey: p402, T:V

**Topic 50: The Importance of Love to Man**

420.050.010 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Love is absolutely indispensable.**

**1 Corinthians 13:1-3** [1] If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. [2] If I have the gift of prophecy and can fathom all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have a faith that can move mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. [3] If I give all I possess to the poor and surrender my body to the flames, but have not love, I gain nothing.

Eloquence and the gift of prophecy and knowledge and faith and sacrifice of possessions and martyrdom are of no value if love is missing.

420.050.020 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: Love is greater than faith and hope.**

**1 Corinthians 13:13** And now these three remain: faith, hope and love. But the greatest of these is love.

420.050.030 Torrey: p402, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Love never fails.**

**1 Corinthians 13:8** Love never fails. But where there are prophecies, they will cease; where there are tongues, they will be stilled; where there is knowledge, it will pass away.

420.050.040 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: Love is the fulfillment of the law. All individual precepts are but applications of this law.**

**Romans 13:8, 10** [8] Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law. [10] Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.

**1 Timothy 1:5** The goal of this command is love, which comes from a pure heart and a good conscience and a sincere faith.

**John 15:17** This is my command: Love each other.

420.050.050 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: Love to one another is the sum of God's commandment, the original and fundamental message of Christianity, Christ's new and all-inclusive commandment.**

**1 John 3:11 23; 3:11** [23] And this is his command: to believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and to love one another as he commanded us. [11] This is the message you heard from the beginning: We should love one another.

**John 13:34** A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another.

420.050.060 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: Love is the royal law.**

**James 2:8** If you really keep the royal law found in Scripture, "Love your neighbor as yourself," you are doing right.

420.050.070 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: Love is the bond that unites all the virtues together into a perfect whole.**

**Colossians 3:12-14** [12] Therefore, as God's chosen people, holy and dearly loved, clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience. [13] Bear with each other and forgive whatever grievances you may have against one another. Forgive as the Lord forgave you. [14] And over all these virtues put on love, which binds them all together in perfect unity.

420.050.080 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: Love is the supreme and decisive test of discipleship.**

**John 13:35** By this all men will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another.

420.050.090 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:9(a)

**POINT 90: Love is the supreme and decisive test of our knowing God.**

**1 John 4:8** Whoever does not love does not know God, because God is love.

420.050.095 Torrey: p403, T:V, P:9(b)

**POINT 95: Love is the one Divine thing.**

420.050.100 Torrey: p404, T:V, P:10

**POINT 100: Love is the supreme test of our being born of God, and being children of God.**

**1 John 4:7** Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God.

**1 John 3:10** This is how we know who the children of God are and who the children of the devil are: Anyone who does not do what is right is not a child of God; nor is anyone who does not love his brother.

**Ephesians 5:1-2** [1] Be imitators of God, therefore, as dearly loved children [2] and live a life of love, just as Christ loved us and gave himself up for us as a fragrant offering and sacrifice to God.

420.050.110 Torrey: p404, T:V, P:11

**POINT 110: Love is the supreme test of our having passed out of death into life.**

**1 John 3:14** We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

420.050.120 Torrey: p404, T:V, P:12

**POINT 120: Love is the supreme test of our abiding in God and God abiding in us.**

**1 John 4:12, 16** [12] No one has ever seen God; but if we love one another, God lives in us and his love is made complete in us. [16] And so we know and rely on the love God has for us. God is love. Whoever lives in love lives in God, and God in him.

420.050.130 Torrey: p404, T:V, P:13

**POINT 130: Love to brethren is the supreme test of love to God.**

**1 John 4:20** If anyone says, "I love God," yet hates his brother, he is a liar. For anyone who does not love his brother, whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen.

420.050.140 Torrey: p404, T:V, P:14

**POINT 140: Love is the one thing above all things which we are to seek to have.**

**1 Peter 4:8** Above all, love each other deeply, because love covers over a multitude of sins.

Paul, John, James, Peter and Jesus, with one voice proclaim the supremacy of love.

420.060.000 Torrey: p404, T:V

## Topic 60: The Blessings that Result from Love to Men

420.060.010 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Love covers a multitude of sins.**

**1 Peter 4:8** Above all, love each other deeply, because love covers over a multitude of sins.

420.060.020 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: Love builds up.**

**1 Corinthians 8:1** Now about food sacrificed to idols: We know that we all possess knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up.

420.060.030 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Love knits together.**

**Colossians 2:2** My purpose is that they may be encouraged in heart and united in love, so that they may have the full riches of complete understanding, in order that they may know the mystery of God, namely, Christ,

420.060.040 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: He who loves his brother abides in the light and there nothing in him makes him stumble.**

**1 John 2:10** Whoever loves his brother lives in the light, and there is nothing in him to make him stumble.

420.060.050 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: Love to brethren gives prevailing power to prayer.**

**1 John 3:22-23** [22] and receive from him anything we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him. [23] And this is his command: to believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and to love one another as he commanded us.

420.070.000 Torrey: p405, T:V

**Topic 70: How Love for Men is Obtained.**

420.070.010 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: Love is of God, and to love we must be born of God.**

**1 John 4:7** Dear friends, let us love one another, for love comes from God. Everyone who loves has been born of God and knows God.

420.070.020 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: We love because God first loved us.**

**1 John 4:19** We love because he first loved us.

His love to us awakens love in us: first to Him and then to man. If we would learn to love we must believe in and meditate upon His love to us.

420.070.030 Torrey: p405, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Faith works by love. Love is the outcome of faith.**

**Galatians 5:6** For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. The only thing that counts is faith expressing itself through love.

**1 John 3:23** And this is his command: to believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and to love one another as he commanded us.

Love is greater than faith, but faith is the root of love. Faith is the root of which love is the fruit. To say "it is better to have love even without faith than it is to have faith without love," is much like saying it is better to have a crop of apples without having roots to your apple trees, than it is to have roots without apples. Rootless trees do not bear fruit and faithless lives do not bring forth love.

420.070.040 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: Love is the fruit of the Spirit.**

**Galatians 5:22-23** [22] But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, [23] gentleness and self-control. Against such things there is no law.

**Romans 5:5** And hope does not disappoint us, because God has poured out his love into our hearts by the Holy Spirit, whom he has given us.

If you wish love let the Spirit work in your heart and bear His fruit in your life. You will never attain unto love by any mere effort of your own. Love is not a fruit that is native to the soil of the human heart.

420.070.050 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: We should follow after Love.**

**1 Corinthians 14:1** Follow the way of love and eagerly desire spiritual gifts, especially the gift of prophecy.

**1 Timothy 6:11** But you, man of God, flee from all this, and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, endurance and gentleness.

**2 Timothy 2:22** Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

While love is the Holy Spirit's work it should be the object of our desire and pursuit.

420.070.060 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: We should provoke spur on one another to love.**

**Hebrews 10:24** And let us consider how we may spur one another on toward love and good deeds.

420.070.070 Torrey: p406, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: God teaches us to love one another.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:9** Now about brotherly love we do not need to write to you, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love each other.

420.070.080 Torrey: p407, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: God imparts increasing love in answer to prayer.**

**Philippians 1:9** [9] And this is my prayer: that your love may abound more and more in knowledge and depth of insight,

420.070.090 Torrey: p407, T:V, P:9

**POINT 90: If you wish to learn to love, let Christ in to live His life in your heart. Renounce self, renounce the flesh, crucify it, put it in the place of the curse and let Christ live his life in you.**

**Galatians 2:20** I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 430

---

430.000.000      Torrey: p408

### PRAYER

#### Who Can Pray So God Will Hear? To Whom Should We Pray?

430.010.000      Torrey: p408, T:I

Topic 10: Who Can Pray so that God Will Hear?

430.010.010      Torrey: p408, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: The one who cherishes iniquity in his heart cannot pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 66:18-19** [18] If I had cherished sin in my heart, the Lord would not have listened; [19] but God has surely listened and heard my voice in prayer.

The word translated "cherished" means primarily to "see" or to "look." Then it comes to mean to "look at with favor," to "respect", "approve." God will not hear the man who in his heart looks upon sin with any favor or allowance, God looks at sin with abhorrence. He is of "purer eyes than to behold evil."

**Habakkuk 1:13** Your eyes are too pure to look on evil; you cannot tolerate wrong. Why then do you tolerate the treacherous? Why are you silent while the wicked swallow up those more righteous than themselves?

The Hebrew verb here is the same as that translated "cherish" above. We must have the same attitude toward sin that He has to be heard of Him. If we cherish sin, He will not regard us when we pray. Herein lies the very simple explanation why many of us pray and are not heard.

430.010.020      Torrey: p408, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: He who turns away from his ear from hearing the law, his prayer is an abomination. He cannot pray so that God will hear.**

**Proverbs 28:9** If anyone turns a deaf ear to the law, even his prayers are detestable.

If we turn our ears away from what God says to us in His law, He will turn His ears away from what



we say to Him in our prayers. We have an illustration in the following:

**Zechariah 7:11-13** [11] "But they refused to pay attention; stubbornly they turned their backs and stopped up their ears. [12] They made their hearts as hard as flint and would not listen to the law or to the words that the LORD Almighty had sent by his Spirit through the earlier prophets. So the LORD Almighty was very angry. [13] " 'When I called, they did not listen; so when they called, I would not listen,' says the LORD Almighty."

Many are saying "The promises of God are not true. God does not hear my prayers." Has God ever promised to hear *your* prayers? God very plainly describes the class whose prayers He hears. Do you belong to that class? Are you listening to His words? If not, He has distinctly said He will not listen to your prayers, and in not listening to you, He is simply keeping His word.

**Proverbs 1:24-25, 28** [24] But since you rejected me when I called and no one gave heed when I stretched out my hand, [25] since you ignored all my advice and would not accept my rebuke, [26] I in turn will laugh at your disaster; I will mock when calamity overtakes you -- [27] when calamity overtakes you like a storm, when disaster sweeps over you like a whirlwind, when distress and trouble overwhelm you. [28] "Then they will call to me but I will not answer; they will look for me but will not find me.

430.010.030      Torrey: p409, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: Whoever stops his heart at the cry of the poor cannot pray so that God will hear.**

**Proverbs 21:13** If a man shuts his ears to the cry of the poor, he too will cry out and not be answered.

If we will not listen to the poor when they cry to us in their need, God will not listen to us when we cry to Him in our need. The world's maxim is "The Lord helps those who help themselves." The truth is, The Lord helps those who help others.

430.010.040      Torrey: p409, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: The great sinner, who is sorry for and humbled by his sin, and who desires pardon, can pray so that God will hear.**

**Luke 18:13-14** [13] "But the tax collector stood at a distance. He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast and said, 'God, have mercy on me, a sinner.' [14] "I tell you that this man, rather than the other, went home justified before God. For everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted."

The question is often asked, "Shall we get unconverted people to pray?" What do you mean by unconverted people? If a man is sorry for his sin, and wishes to forsake it and find mercy, and is willing to humble himself before God and ask for pardon, he is taking the very steps by which a man turns around, or is "converted." To tell a man he must not pray under such circumstances, is to tell him that he must not be converted until he is converted; that he must not turn until he is turned around. To get him to pray is just the thing to do, "For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (Romans 10:13)

But how, someone may ask, can he pray until he has faith? The answer is very simple. This prayer itself is the first act of faith. The first and most natural and most proper thing for one who honestly wishes to turn from sin and to believe in Christ and to be saved to do, is to pray. The Lord Jesus looked on with delight when he could say to Ananias of the stubborn rebel, Saul of Tarsus, "Behold, he

prays."

**Acts 9:11** The Lord told him, "Go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man from Tarsus named Saul, for he is praying.

We should be sure, however, that the sinner really is sorry for sin and really wishes to forsake it before we tell him to pray for pardon. You can get him on his knees even before this, and so get him to realize that he is in God's presence, so that his rebellious heart may be humbled, but do not have him pray until he really does wish to turn from sin.

430.010.050     Torrey: p410, T:I, P:5

**POINT 50: Those who believe in the name of the Son of God can pray so that God will hear.**

**1 John 5:13-15** [13] I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life. [14] This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. [15] And if we know that he hears us -- whatever we ask -- we know that we have what we asked of him.

The promises of the New Testament cannot be applied indiscriminately to all men. A great mistake is often made by taking promises made to the believer and applying them as if they referred to all classes of men; or by taking promises made to those who have surrendered absolutely to the will of God, and applying them as if they referred to all professed believers. When we find promises with "we" and "you" in them, we should study the context and find out who the "we's" and "you" are, and whether we belong to that class.

430.010.060     Torrey: p411, T:I, P:6

**POINT 60: The righteous and the upright can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 34:15, 17** [15] The eyes of the LORD are on the righteous and his ears are attentive to their cry; [16] the face of the LORD is against those who do evil, to cut off the memory of them from the earth. [17] The righteous cry out, and the LORD hears them; he delivers them from all their troubles.

**Proverbs 15:29** The LORD is far from the wicked but he hears the prayer of the righteous.

**Proverbs 15:8** The LORD detests the sacrifice of the wicked, but the prayer of the upright pleases him.

Note - The words translated righteous and upright have practically the same meaning. They both mean primarily "right" or "straight." (The latter may also mean "level" or "even.")

430.010.070     Torrey: p411, T:I, P:7

**POINT 70: The godly (or merciful) can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 32:6** Therefore let everyone who is godly pray to you while you may be found; surely when the mighty waters rise, they will not reach him.

The word translated "godly" in this passage is so translated three times in the Authorized Version, four times in the Revised Version. But its primary significance is "kind" or "merciful." It could be so translated in at least almost every passage where used. It is frequently translated "saints."

430.010.080     Torrey: p411, T:I, P:8

**POINT 80: Those who fear God can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 145:19** He fulfills the desires of those who fear him; he hears their cry and saves them.

To fear God means to have that reverent regard for God that is due him and that manifests itself in glad obedience to His will.

**Hebrews 12:28-29** [28] Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful, and so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe, [29] for our "God is a consuming fire."

**1 Peter 2:17** Show proper respect to everyone: Love the brotherhood of believers, fear God, honor the king.

**Revelation 14:7** He said in a loud voice, "Fear God and give him glory, because the hour of his judgment has come. Worship him who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water."

**2 Corinthians 7:1** Since we have these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that contaminates body and spirit, perfecting holiness out of reverence for God.

**2 Samuel 23:3-4** [3] The God of Israel spoke, the Rock of Israel said to me: 'When one rules over men in righteousness, when he rules in the fear of God, [4] he is like the light of morning at sunrise on a cloudless morning, like the brightness after rain that brings the grass from the earth.'

**Proverbs 8:13** To fear the LORD is to hate evil; I hate pride and arrogance, evil behavior and perverse speech.

**Proverbs 16:6** Through love and faithfulness sin is atoned for; through the fear of the LORD a man avoids evil.

**Isaiah 11:2-3** [2] The Spirit of the LORD will rest on him -- the Spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the Spirit of counsel and of power, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD -- [3] and he will delight in the fear of the LORD. He will not judge by what he sees with his eyes, or decide by what he hears with his ears;

**Psalms 2:11** Serve the LORD with fear and rejoice with trembling.

**Psalms 25:14** The LORD confides in those who fear him; he makes his covenant known to them.

**Psalms 33:18** But the eyes of the LORD are on those who fear him, on those whose hope is in his unfailing love,

**Psalms 34:7, 9** [7] The angel of the LORD encamps around those who fear him, and he delivers them. [9] Fear the LORD, you his saints, for those who fear him lack nothing.

**Revelation 19:5** Then a voice came from the throne, saying: "Praise our God, all you his servants, you who fear him, both small and great!"

**Psalms 115:11** You who fear him, trust in the LORD -- he is their help and shield.

**Psalms 118:4** Let those who fear the LORD say: "His love endures forever."

430.010.090      Torrey: p411, T:I, P:9

**POINT 90: Those who keep God's commandments and do the things that are pleasing in His sight can pray so that God will hear.**

**1 John 3:21-22** [21] Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God [22] and receive from him anything we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him.

Here we find one of the greatest secrets of prevailing prayer. If we listen to God's commandments God will listen to our prayers. If we do as He bids us in His word, He will do as we ask him in our prayers. If we do what pleases Him, He will do what pleases us. This is the converse of Point 2 above. The one who turns away his ear from hearing God's law cannot pray so that God will hear; the one who turns his ear to listen attentively to God's Word can pray so that God will hear. This explains why some men's prayers are heard and some men's are not. To keep His commandments means more than merely yield obedience to them; it means to guard them as a precious possession, to treasure them. It is the opposite of the spirit of those "critics" who are trying to pare down the Word of God to the smallest possible dimensions. The more they can give away of God's Word the more they seem delighted. They cannot pray so God will hear. If they have so little regard for God's Word, God will have very little regard for theirs.

430.010.100      Torrey: p412, T:I, P:10

**POINT 100: Those who abide in Christ, and Christ's words abide in them, can pray so that God will hear. They can ask whatever they wish and it will be done for them.**

**John 15:7** If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you.

This is the other great secret of prevailing prayer. It is closely related to the preceding. What is it to abide in Christ? It is to continue in living union with Him. To bear the same relation to Him that the living healthy branch, the continuously fruit-bearing branch, does to the vine. This branch has no independent life of its own. Its sap and vigor all come from the vine. Its leaves, buds, blossoms, fruit are all the product of the life of the vine in it. So we abide in Christ in so far as we have no independent life of our own. In so far as we do not seek to have any thoughts, plans, feelings, purposes, works, fruit of our own, but let Christ think his thoughts, feel His feelings, purpose His purposes, work His works, bear His fruit, in us. When we do this, and in so far as we do this, we may ask whatsoever we wish and it shall be done.

It may be asked: "But what if we ask something contrary to God's will?" We cannot in so far as we remain in Christ; our prayers themselves will be the outcome of the Christ-life in us. The Father hears Him always and will hear Him when He prays through us. Note that He says also, "And my words remain in you." It is through His words, and only through His words, that Christ imparts His life to us and lives His life in us. The words of Christ are the vehicle of the life of Christ. It is vain, then, to talk or think of remaining in Christ if we neglect His words. We must let His words sink deep into our souls and form us, mold our thoughts, our feelings, our purposes, our plans, our actions. The way the promise reads is: "If you remain in me and my words remain in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you."

430.010.110      Torrey: p413, T:I, P:11

**POINT 110: The one who dwells in the shelter of the Most High, who sets his love upon God and knows His name, can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 91:14 1, 14-15** [1] He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty. [14] "Because he loves me," says the LORD, "I will rescue him; I will protect him, for he acknowledges my name. [15] He will call upon me, and I will answer him; I will be with him in trouble, I will deliver him and honor him.

What is it to dwell in the shelter of the Most High? The word translated "shelter" means primarily "a covering", then "hiding-place", "protection." It is translated "protection" once, and "hiding place" a number of times. To dwell in the shelter of the Most High, means, then, to put oneself and keep oneself under the protection of the Most High, to be covered and hid from all harm by Him. It means to leave all our welfare absolutely to Him, and to look to Him and to trust Him to take care of it.

To know His name, means to know Him as he has revealed Himself to us. That is only possible through the study of the Word.

430.010.120      Torrey: p413, T:I, P:12

**POINT 120: He who delights himself in the Lord can pray so that the Lord will hear.**

**Psalms 37:4** Delight yourself in the LORD and he will give you the desires of your heart.

If our delight is in Him, our great prayer will be for Himself, and He is always willing to give Himself. With Himself He will grant every other desire of our hearts. If our delight is in Him, it will be His delight to give us what we ask. Do you delight in the Lord? Remember that "delight" is a very strong word.

430.010.130      Torrey: p414, T:I, P:13

**POINT 130: He who commits his way to the Lord and trusts in Him can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 37:5** Commit your way to the LORD; trust in him and he will do this:

The word here translated "commit" means literally "roll." To commit our way to the Lord is to roll it upon Him, leave its direction and protection entirely to Him. Have you done this? Put the entire guidance and outcome of your life in His hands, and your way will always be so near His that He can hear your faintest whisper when you call to Him.

430.010.140      Torrey: p414, T:I, P:14

**POINT 140: The humble can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 9:12** For he who avenges blood remembers; he does not ignore the cry of the afflicted.

**Psalms 10:17** [17] You hear, O LORD, the desire of the afflicted; you encourage them, and you listen to their cry,

The Revised Version translates the words differently in these two passages. In Psalms 9:12 it is translated "poor." In Psalms 10:17 the word is translated "afflicted." The two words so translated are closely related, almost identical, and are from the same root. According to one reading they are exactly the same. The thought of the words is "the afflicted" who bear their afflictions with meekness and humility. This latter thought is especially true of the word used in Psalms 10:17. See also:

**Zephaniah 2:3** Seek the LORD, all you humble of the land, you who do what he commands. Seek righteousness, seek humility; perhaps you will be sheltered on the day of the LORD's anger.

430.010.150     Torrey: p414, T:I, P:15

**POINT 150: The needy and the destitute can pray so that God will hear.**

**Psalms 69:33** The LORD hears the needy and does not despise his captive people.

**Psalms 102:17** He will respond to the prayer of the destitute; he will not despise their plea.

The word translated "destitute" is a very strong word, meaning primarily "naked." Those to whom man does not listen are just the ones to whom God does listen:

**Luke 1:53** He has filled the hungry with good things but has sent the rich away empty.

The poor cannot get a hearing down here, but they can before God. The more a man has, the more attentively the world listens to him; the more a man needs, the more attentively God listens to him.

430.010.160     Torrey: p415, T:I, P:16

**POINT 160: The suffering ones among God's people can pray so that God will hear.**

**James 5:13** Is any one of you in trouble? He should pray. Is anyone happy? Let him sing songs of praise.

Men often hesitate to pray to God because their afflictions are so many. These afflictions are a warrant for praying, and a guarantee that God will hear you.

Compare **Matthew 11:28** Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest.

Many are saying, "My troubles and sorrows are so many, what shall I do?" Pray. If any among you are suffering, let him pray.

430.010.170     Torrey: p415, T:I, P:17

**POINT 170: The oppressed can pray so that God will hear.**

**Isaiah 19:20** It will be a sign and witness to the LORD Almighty in the land of Egypt. When they cry out to the LORD because of their oppressors, he will send them a savior and defender, and he will rescue them.

**James 5:4** Look! The wages you failed to pay the workmen who mowed your fields are crying out against you. The cries of the harvesters have reached the ears of the Lord Almighty.

The oppressed cry for justice down here, but only get greater oppression; but God will hear if they cry to Him, and will deliver and avenge them. Israel cried to Pharaoh and were only sent to more bitter bondage, to make bricks without straw. Israel cried to Jehovah, and He brought them forth with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm. So will He do again when the oppressed cry to Him and not human governments.

430.010.180     Torrey: p415, T:I, P:18

**POINT 180: Widows and fatherless children can pray so that God will hear.**



**Exodus 22:22-23** [22] "Do not take advantage of a widow or an orphan. [23] If you do and they cry out to me, I will certainly hear their cry.

430.010.190     Torrey: p416, T:I, P:19

**POINT 190: The child of God who lacks wisdom can pray so that God will hear.**

**James 1:5** If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.

If we lack human wisdom we can have God's wisdom. If we are full of our own wisdom we can not have His.

430.010.200     Torrey: p416, T:I, P:20

**POINT 200: The man who is sincerely seeking the truth, and obeying the truth as fast as he finds it, even though he does not yet know the truth as it is in Jesus, and so is not as yet saved, can pray so that God will hear.**

**Acts 10:24, 30-32** [24] The following day he arrived in Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them and had called together his relatives and close friends. [30] Cornelius answered: "Four days ago I was in my house praying at this hour, at three in the afternoon. Suddenly a man in shining clothes stood before me [31] and said, 'Cornelius, God has heard your prayer and remembered your gifts to the poor. [32] Send to Joppa for Simon who is called Peter. He is a guest in the home of Simon the tanner, who lives by the sea.'

Compare **Acts 11:14** He will bring you a message through which you and all your household will be saved.

430.020.000     Torrey: p416, T:II

**Topic 20: To Whom One Should Pray.**

430.020.010     Torrey: p416, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: We should pray to God.**

**Acts 12:5** So Peter was kept in prison, but the church was earnestly praying to God for him.

Much so-called prayer is not to God. There is very little thought of God in it. We think of the audience; we think, it may be, of our need; but there is not a clear, deep sense that we have come into the presence of the all holy, almighty, all-loving One, and are laying hold upon Him for His help. This is one of the most frequent causes of failure in prayer. We do not really pray to God. The first thing to do when we pray is to actually come into God's presence, to dismiss from our minds, so far as possible, all thought of our surroundings and look to the Spirit to present God to our minds and make Him real to us. It is possible by the Holy Spirit's aid to have God so really present that it almost seems as if we could see and touch Him. Indeed, we do see Him with the spirit's eyes, and touch Him with the hand of faith.

430.020.020     Torrey: p417, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: We should pray to the Father.**

**Matthew 6:9** [9] This, then, is how you should pray: "Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name, [10] your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven."



**Luke 11:13** If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!

**John 16:13** But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come.

Various modes of address to him are found in the prayers recorded in the Bible:

**John 17:1** After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: "*Father*, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you."

**John 17:25** *Righteous Father*, though the world does not know you, I know you, and they know that you have sent me.

**Matthew 6:9** This, then, is how you should pray: "*Our Father in heaven*, hallowed be your name,

**Acts 4:24** When they heard this, they raised their voices together in prayer to God. "*Sovereign Lord*," they said, "*you made the heaven and the earth and the sea, and everything in them.*"

**Ephesians 1:17** I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, *the glorious Father*, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better.

**Ephesians 3:14** [14] For this reason I kneel before the Father, [15] from whom his whole family in heaven and on earth derives its name.

**1 Thessalonians 3:11** Now may our God and Father himself and our Lord Jesus clear the way for us to come to you.

430.020.030      Torrey: p418, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: We should pray to the Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Acts 7:59** While they were stoning him, Stephen prayed, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit."

**2 Corinthians 12:8-9** [8] Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. [9] But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me.

**Acts 9:9-10, 13-14, 17, 20- 21** [9] For three days he was blind, and did not eat or drink anything. [10] In Damascus there was a disciple named Ananias. The Lord called to him in a vision, "Ananias!" "Yes, Lord," he answered. [13] "Lord," Ananias answered, "I have heard many reports about this man and all the harm he has done to your saints in Jerusalem. [14] And he has come here with authority from the chief priests to arrest all who call on your name." [17] Then Ananias went to the house and entered it. Placing his hands on Saul, he said, "Brother Saul, the Lord -- Jesus, who appeared to you on the road as you were coming here -- has sent me so that you may see again and be filled with the Holy Spirit." [20] At once he began to preach in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of God. [21] All those who heard him were astonished and asked, "Isn't he the man who raised havoc in Jerusalem among those who call on this name? And hasn't he come here to take them as prisoners to the chief priests?"

**2 Timothy 2:22** Flee the evil desires of youth, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace, along with those who call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

Compare **2 Timothy 4:8** Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day -- and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

**1 Corinthians 1:2** [2] To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus and called to be holy, together with all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ -- their Lord and ours:

**Romans 10:12-13** [12] For there is no difference between Jew and Gentile -- the same Lord is Lord of all and richly blesses all who call on him, [13] for, "Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved."

Compare **Romans 10:9** That if you confess with your mouth, "Jesus is Lord," and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.

One of the most distinctive characteristics of Christians is that they pray to Jesus Christ. They were spoken of in apostolic days as those who called on the name of Jesus:

**Acts 9:21 14, 21** [14] And he has come here with authority from the chief priests to arrest all who call on your name. [21] All those who heard him were astonished and asked, "Isn't he the man who raised havoc in Jerusalem among those who call on this name? And hasn't he come here to take them as prisoners to the chief priests?"

**1 Corinthians 1:2** To the church of God in Corinth, to those sanctified in Christ Jesus and called to be holy, together with all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus Christ -- their Lord and ours:

QUESTION: Should we pray to the Holy Spirit?

ANSWER: There is no recorded prayer in the Bible to the Holy Spirit, but the communion of the Holy Spirit is spoken of. This may imply prayer, but it may mean the partaking of the Holy Spirit.

Compare **1 Corinthians 10:16** Is not the cup of thanksgiving for which we give thanks a participation in the blood of Christ? And is not the bread that we break a participation in the body of Christ?

We are dependent upon the Holy Spirit for everything, and so we must look to Him, which implies prayer. Yet it is the Father and the Son who give the Holy Spirit.

**John 14:16-17** [16] And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever -- [17] the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you.

**John 15:26** When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me.

**Acts 2:33** Exalted to the right hand of God, he has received from the Father the promised Holy

Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear.

It would seem then that if we wished Him, instead of praying directly to Him, we should pray to the Father or to the Son for Him.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 430

---

### PRAYER

### For Whom and When to Pray

430.030.000     Torrey: p418, T:III

Topic 30: For Whom to Pray

430.030.010     Torrey: p419, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: We should pray for ourselves.**

**1 Chronicles 4:10** Jabez cried out to the God of Israel, "Oh, that you would bless me and enlarge my territory! Let your hand be with me, and keep me from harm so that I will be free from pain." And God granted his request.

**Psalms 106:4-5** [4] Remember me, O LORD, when you show favor to your people, come to my aid when you save them, [5] that I may enjoy the prosperity of your chosen ones, that I may share in the joy of your nation and join your inheritance in giving praise.

**2 Corinthians 12:7-8** [7] To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. [8] Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me.

**Hebrews 5:7** During the days of Jesus' life on earth, he offered up prayers and petitions with loud cries and tears to the one who could save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission.

**John 17:1** After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: "Father, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you."

A prayer for self is not by any means necessarily a selfish prayer. We may pray for something for ourselves in order that God may be glorified by our receiving it. (John 17:1)

**Psalms 50:14-15** [14] Sacrifice thank offerings to God, fulfill your vows to the Most High, [15] and call upon me in the day of trouble; I will deliver you, and you will honor me.

If we would pray more for ourselves, God would be more glorified in us, and we would be a greater blessing to others. It was well for the world that Jesus spent so much time in prayer for Himself. If we

wish to be fit to pray for others we must spend much time in prayer for ourselves. It is a bad sign when one is always praying for others and never for himself. He is not like his Master.

430.030.020     Torrey: p419, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: We should pray for one another -- i.e., believers should pray for fellow- believers.**

**James 5:16** Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

**Romans 1:9-10** [9] God, whom I serve with my whole heart in preaching the gospel of his Son, is my witness how constantly I remember you [10] in my prayers at all times; and I pray that now at last by God's will the way may be opened for me to come to you.

430.030.030     Torrey: p420, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: We should pray for Ministers of the Word.**

**Ephesians 6:19-20** [19] Pray also for me, that whenever I open my mouth, words may be given me so that I will fearlessly make known the mystery of the gospel, [20] for which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that I may declare it fearlessly, as I should.

**Colossians 4:3** And pray for us, too, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains.

**2 Thessalonians 3:1-2** [1] Finally, brothers, pray for us that the message of the Lord may spread rapidly and be honored, just as it was with you. [2] And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men, for not everyone has faith.

**Acts 13:2-3** [2] While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." [3] So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

**Matthew 9:38** Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field.

Those whom God has called to devote their lives to the ministry of the Word should be the especial objects of the prayers of God's people. The neglect of prayer on the part of God's people accounts very largely for the absence of power on the part of God's ministers.

430.030.040     Torrey: p420, T:III, P:4

**POINT 40: We should pray for those who have been converted through our ministry.**

**1 Thessalonians 3:9-13** [9] How can we thank God enough for you in return for all the joy we have in the presence of our God because of you? [10] Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you again and supply what is lacking in your faith. [11] Now may our God and Father himself and our Lord Jesus clear the way for us to come to you. [12] May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you. [13] May he strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the presence of our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones.

It is remarkable how often Paul writes to his converts about his praying for them. We find Jesus also praying for His converts:

**John 17:9-26** [9] I pray for them. I am not praying for the world, but for those you have given me, for they are yours. [10] All I have is yours, and all you have is mine. And glory has come to me through them. [11] I will remain in the world no longer, but they are still in the world, and I am coming to you. Holy Father, protect them by the power of your name -- the name you gave me -- so that they may be one as we are one. [12] While I was with them, I protected them and kept them safe by that name you gave me. None has been lost except the one doomed to destruction so that Scripture would be fulfilled. [13] "I am coming to you now, but I say these things while I am still in the world, so that they may have the full measure of my joy within them. [14] I have given them your word and the world has hated them, for they are not of the world any more than I am of the world. [15] My prayer is not that you take them out of the world but that you protect them from the evil one. [16] They are not of the world, even as I am not of it. [17] Sanctify them by the truth; your word is truth. [18] As you sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world. [19] For them I sanctify myself, that they too may be truly sanctified. [20] "My prayer is not for them alone. I pray also for those who will believe in me through their message, [21] that all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us so that the world may believe that you have sent me. [22] I have given them the glory that you gave me, that they may be one as we are one: [23] I in them and you in me. May they be brought to complete unity to let the world know that you sent me and have loved them even as you have loved me. [24] "Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory you have given me because you loved me before the creation of the world. [25] "Righteous Father, though the world does not know you, I know you, and they know that you have sent me. [26] I have made you known to them, and will continue to make you known in order that the love you have for me may be in them and that I myself may be in them."

It is to be feared that few modern ministers pray for their converts with the frequency and intensity that Paul did for his. "Night and day praying exceedingly" he writes in one place.

430.030.050      Torrey: p421, T:III, P:5

**POINT 50: We should pray for sick brethren.**

**James 5:14, 16** [14] Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. [16] Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

430.030.060      Torrey: p421, T:III, P:6

**POINT 60: We should pray for any brother we see committing a sin that will not lead to the sinner's death.**

**1 John 5:16-17** [16] If anyone sees his brother commit a sin that does not lead to death, he should pray and God will give him life. I refer to those whose sin does not lead to death. There is a sin that leads to death. I am not saying that he should pray about that. [17] All wrongdoing is sin, and there is sin that does not lead to death.

430.030.070      Torrey: p421, T:III, P:7

**POINT 70: We should pray for all the saints.**

**Ephesians 6:18** And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

Christ's prayer took in all believers in all ages.

**John 17:9, 20** [9] I pray for them. I am not praying for the world, but for those you have given me, for they are yours. [20] "My prayer is not for them alone. I pray also for those who will believe in me through their message, [21] that all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us so that the world may believe that you have sent me.

Our sympathies, and consequently our prayers, should take in the whole Church of Christ. It is astounding how narrow is the circle taken in by the prayers of the average Christian. Every child of God is my brother, and should be remembered in my prayers. Let us give our prayers a wider sweep.

**Psalms 36:10** Continue your love to those who know you, your righteousness to the upright in heart.

430.030.080      Torrey: p422, T:III, P:8

**POINT 80: We should pray for our children.**

**1 Chronicles 29:19** And give my son Solomon the wholehearted devotion to keep your commands, requirements and decrees and to do everything to build the palatial structure for which I have provided.

430.030.090      Torrey: p422, T:III, P:9

**POINT 90: We should pray for our rulers.**

**1 Timothy 2:2-3** [1] I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone -- [2] for kings and all those in authority, that we may live peaceful and quiet lives in all godliness and holiness. [3] This is good, and pleases God our Savior, [4] who wants all men to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.

It is to be feared that most Christians today are grievously disobedient to God at this point. The present fashion is to rail at our rulers. This is in direct disobedience to God's Word:

**Jude 1:8-9** [8] In the very same way, these dreamers pollute their own bodies, reject authority and slander celestial beings. [9] But even the archangel Michael, when he was disputing with the devil about the body of Moses, did not dare to bring a slanderous accusation against him, but said, "The Lord rebuke you!"

**2 Peter 2:10-11** [10] This is especially true of those who follow the corrupt desire of the sinful nature and despise authority. Bold and arrogant, these men are not afraid to slander celestial beings; [11] yet even angels, although they are stronger and more powerful, do not bring slanderous accusations against such beings in the presence of the Lord.

**1 Peter 2:17** Show proper respect to everyone: Love the brotherhood of believers, fear God, honor the king.

Christians can accomplish far more for "good government" by praying for than by railing at the powers that be.

430.030.100      Torrey: p422, T:III, P:10

**POINT 100: We should pray for the city where we live.**

**Jeremiah 29:7** Also, seek the peace and prosperity of the city to which I have carried you into



exile. Pray to the LORD for it, because if it prospers, you too will prosper.

A Christian should be interested in all lands and in all places. But we have an especial responsibility and duty in prayer, as well as service, toward the place where God puts us.

430.030.110     Torrey: p423, T:III, P:11

**POINT 110: We should pray for Israel.**

**Romans 10:1** Brothers, my heart's desire and prayer to God for the Israelites is that they may be saved.

**Joel 2:17** Let the priests, who minister before the LORD, weep between the temple porch and the altar. Let them say, "Spare your people, O LORD. Do not make your inheritance an object of scorn, a byword among the nations. Why should they say among the peoples, 'Where is their God?'"

**Isaiah 62:6-7** [6] I have posted watchmen on your walls, O Jerusalem; they will never be silent day or night. You who call on the LORD, give yourselves no rest, [7] and give him no rest till he establishes Jerusalem and makes her the praise of the earth.

It is a sin not to pray for Israel.

**1 Samuel 12:22-23** [22] For the sake of his great name the LORD will not reject his people, because the LORD was pleased to make you his own. [23] As for me, far be it from me that I should sin against the LORD by failing to pray for you. And I will teach you the way that is good and right.

A special blessing is pronounced upon those who pray for Jerusalem.

**Psalms 122:6-7** [6] Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: "May those who love you be secure. [7] May there be peace within your walls and security within your citadels."

Jerusalem is very dear to God.

**1 Kings 11:13** Yet I will not tear the whole kingdom from him, but will give him one tribe for the sake of David my servant and for the sake of Jerusalem, which I have chosen.

**Zechariah 2:7-8, 10-12** [7] "Come, O Zion! Escape, you who live in the Daughter of Babylon!" [8] For this is what the LORD Almighty says: "After he has honored me and has sent me against the nations that have plundered you -- for whoever touches you touches the apple of his eye -- [10] "Shout and be glad, O Daughter of Zion. For I am coming, and I will live among you," declares the LORD. [11] "Many nations will be joined with the LORD in that day and will become my people. I will live among you and you will know that the LORD Almighty has sent me to you. [12] The LORD will inherit Judah as his portion in the holy land and will again choose Jerusalem.

430.030.120     Torrey: p423, T:III, P:12

**POINT 120: We should pray for those who use us spitefully and persecute us.**

**Luke 6:28** bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you.

**Matthew 5:44** [44] But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,

**Luke 23:34** Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." And

they divided up his clothes by casting lots.

**Acts 7:60** Then he fell on his knees and cried out, "Lord, do not hold this sin against them." When he had said this, he fell asleep.

We have a special obligation to pray toward those who do us wrong.

430.030.130 Torrey: p423, T:III, P:(13)

**POINT 130: We should pray for all men.**

**1 Timothy 2:1** I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone

We should pray for all men.

The love of God takes in the world.

**John 3:16** For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.

So should our prayers; but there are certain classes, as seen above, toward whom we have a special obligation of prayer.

430.040.000 Torrey: p424, T:IV

**Topic 40: When to Pray**

430.040.010 Torrey: p424, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: The holy men of the Bible prayed three times a day, evening, morning, and at noon.**

**Daniel 6:10** Now when Daniel learned that the decree had been published, he went home to his upstairs room where the windows opened toward Jerusalem. Three times a day he got down on his knees and prayed, giving thanks to his God, just as he had done before.

**Psalms 55:16-17** [16] But I call to God, and the LORD saves me. [17] Evening, morning and noon I cry out in distress, and he hears my voice.

**Acts 10:9** About noon the following day as they were on their journey and approaching the city, Peter went up on the roof to pray.

**Acts 10:30** Cornelius answered: "Four days ago I was in my house praying at this hour, at three in the afternoon. ...

**Acts 2:1, 15** [1] When the day of Pentecost came, they were all together in one place [to pray. After they received the Spirit they began speaking in tongues]. [15] These men are not drunk, as you suppose. It's only nine in the morning!

430.040.020 Torrey: p424, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: We should pray very early in the morning, before dawn.**

**Psalms 119:146-147** [146] I call out to you; save me and I will keep your statutes. [147] I rise before dawn and cry for help; I have put my hope in your word.

**Mark 1:35** Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, where he prayed.

430.040.030 Torrey: p424, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: Our Master and Example "continued all night in prayer to God."**

**Luke 6:12** One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.

This was on the eve of a decisive step in His life, the choice of the twelve. A similar thing occurred at a great crisis in His life, when the multitude wished to take Him and make Him king.

**John 6:15** Jesus, knowing that they intended to come and make him king by force, withdrew again to a mountain by himself.

Compare **Mark 6:46-48** [46] After leaving them, he went up on a mountainside to pray. [47] When evening came, the boat was in the middle of the lake, and he was alone on land. [48] He saw the disciples straining at the oars, because the wind was against them. About the fourth watch of the night he went out to them, walking on the lake. ...

First-century Jerusalem did not measure time in hours; nights were divided into four 'watches'.

It is a good example to follow. There are some who strangely object to whole nights spent in prayer. They say that faith takes at once what it asks. Did the Saviour not have faith?

Compare also **Isaiah 40:31** but those who hope in the LORD will renew their strength. They will soar on wings like eagles; they will run and not grow weary, they will walk and not be faint.

Nights of prayer to God are followed by days of power with men. It is recorded of John Livingston that he spent a night in prayer and religious intercourse with a company like-minded, and that the next day he preached with such power in the kirk of Shotts that 500 people dated their conversion or some definite advance in their spiritual life from that sermon. Of course, one can keep a night of prayer in a false and legal way.

430.040.040 Torrey: p425, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: We should pray day and night.**

**Psalms 88:1** O LORD, the God who saves me, day and night I cry out before you.

At all times our heart should be looking up to God, and this upward look of the heart will be frequently uttering itself in a cry to Him.

430.040.050 Torrey: p425, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: We should pray at every meal.**

**Matthew 14:19** And he directed the people to sit down on the grass. Taking the five loaves and the two fish and looking up to heaven, he gave thanks and broke the loaves. Then he gave them to the disciples, and the disciples gave them to the people.

**Acts 27:35** After he said this, he took some bread and gave thanks to God in front of them all. Then he broke it and began to eat.

**1 Timothy 4:4-5** [4] For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, [5] because it is consecrated by the word of God and prayer.

430.040.060     Torrey: p425, T:IV, P:6

**POINT 60: We should pray to God in the day of trouble.**

**Psalms 50:15** and call upon me in the day of trouble; I will deliver you, and you will honor me."

**Psalms 81:7** In your distress you called and I rescued you, I answered you out of a thundercloud; I tested you at the waters of Meribah.

**Psalms 77:1-2** [1] I cried out to God for help; I cried out to God to hear me. [2] When I was in distress, I sought the Lord; at night I stretched out untiring hands and my soul refused to be comforted.

**Psalms 86:7** In the day of my trouble I will call to you, for you will answer me.

Compare the following; here two different Hebrew words are used, but both are from the same root as the words used in passages given above.

**Psalms 18:6** In my distress I called to the LORD; I cried to my God for help. From his temple he heard my voice; my cry came before him, into his ears.

**Psalms 120:1** I call on the LORD in my distress, and he answers me.

**Psalms 118:5** In my anguish I cried to the LORD, and he answered by setting me free.

430.040.070     Torrey: p426, T:IV, P:7

**POINT 70: We should pray to God when the number of our enemies increases and many rise up against us.**

**Psalms 3:1-2** [1] O LORD, how many are my foes! How many rise up against me! [2] Many are saying of me, "God will not deliver him."

When enemies increase we should not despair but cry to God. Then we can lie down without fear to sleep. We need not fear though ten thousands of people set themselves against us round about.

Compare **Psalms 3:5-6** [5] I lie down and sleep; I wake again, because the LORD sustains me. [6] I will not fear the tens of thousands drawn up against me on every side.

430.040.080     Torrey: p426, T:IV, P:8

**POINT 80: We should pray to God in the day of battle.**

**1 Chronicles 5:20** They were helped in fighting them, and God handed the Hagrites and all their allies over to them, because they cried out to him during the battle. He answered their prayers, because they trusted in him.

Victory is of the Lord, therefore, in every battle we should cry to Him.

**Proverbs 21:31** The horse is made ready for the day of battle, but victory rests with the LORD.

430.040.090     Torrey: p426, T:IV, P:9

**POINT 90: We should pray to God when out-numbered by enemies and when we have no defense against them, and do not know what to do.**

**2 Chronicles 14:8-9, 11** [8] Asa had an army of three hundred thousand men from Judah, equipped with large shields and with spears, and two hundred and eighty thousand from Benjamin, armed with small shields and with bows. All these were brave fighting men. [9] Zerah the Cushite marched out against them with a vast army and three hundred chariots, and came as far as Mareshah. [11] Then Asa called to the LORD his God and said, "LORD, there is no one like you to help the powerless against the mighty. Help us, O LORD our God, for we rely on you, and in your name we have come against this vast army. O LORD, you are our God; do not let man prevail against you."

**2 Chronicles 20:1-4, 12** [1] After this, the Moabites and Ammonites with some of the Meunites came to make war on Jehoshaphat. [2] Some men came and told Jehoshaphat, "A vast army is coming against you from Edom, from the other side of the Sea. It is already in Hazazon Tamar" (that is, En Gedi). [3] Alarmed, Jehoshaphat resolved to inquire of the LORD, and he proclaimed a fast for all Judah. [4] The people of Judah came together to seek help from the LORD; indeed, they came from every town in Judah to seek him. [12] O our God, will you not judge them? For we have no power to face this vast army that is attacking us. We do not know what to do, but our eyes are upon you.

When there is nothing else left to do, there is one thing that always remains -- pray to God.

430.040.100 Torrey: p427, T:IV, P:10

**POINT 100: We should pray to God when in great extremities.**

**2 Chronicles 13:13-16** [13] Now Jeroboam had sent troops around to the rear, so that while he was in front of Judah the ambush was behind them. [14] Judah turned and saw that they were being attacked at both front and rear. Then they cried out to the LORD. The priests blew their trumpets [15] and the men of Judah raised the battle cry. At the sound of their battle cry, God routed Jeroboam and all Israel before Abijah and Judah. [16] The Israelites fled before Judah, and God delivered them into their hands.

430.040.110 Torrey: p427, T:IV, P:11

**POINT 110: We should pray to God when all human help fails.**

**Psalms 60:11** Give us aid against the enemy, for the help of man is worthless.

430.040.120 Torrey: p427, T:IV, P:12

**POINT 120: We should pray to God when our soul fails within us.**

**Jonah 2:7** When my life was ebbing away, I remembered you, LORD, and my prayer rose to you, to your holy temple.

430.040.130 Torrey: p427, T:IV, P:13

**POINT 130: We should pray to God when our heart is overwhelmed.**

**Psalms 61:2** From the ends of the earth I call to you, I call as my heart grows faint; lead me to the rock that is higher than I.

430.040.140 Torrey: p427, T:IV, P:14

**POINT 140: We should pray to God when in the depths.**

**Psalms 130:1** Out of the depths I cry to you, O LORD;

430.040.150 Torrey: p428, T:IV, P:15

**POINT 150: We should pray to God in the day when we are being chastened for sin, when we are in a far country and desiring to come back to God.**

**Deuteronomy 4:25-29** [25] After you have had children and grandchildren and have lived in the land a long time -- if you then become corrupt and make any kind of idol, doing evil in the eyes of the LORD your God and provoking him to anger, [26] I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you this day that you will quickly perish from the land that you are crossing the Jordan to possess. You will not live there long but will certainly be destroyed. [27] The LORD will scatter you among the peoples, and only a few of you will survive among the nations to which the LORD will drive you. [28] There you will worship man-made gods of wood and stone, which cannot see or hear or eat or smell. [29] But if from there you seek the LORD your God, you will find him if you look for him with all your heart and with all your soul.

The chastisements of God are a call to prayer.

430.040.160 Torrey: p428, T:IV, P:16

**POINT 160: We should call upon God while He is near and may be found.**

**Isaiah 55:6** Seek the LORD while he may be found; call on him while he is near.

430.040.170 Torrey: p428, T:IV, P:17

**POINT 170: We should pray to God as long as we live.**

**Psalms 116:1-2** [1] I love the LORD, for he heard my voice; he heard my cry for mercy. [2] Because he turned his ear to me, I will call on him as long as I live.

The last utterances of Christ were prayers. The last words of the Bible are prayers.

430.040.180 Torrey: p428, T:IV, P:18

**POINT 180: We should pray always and not faint; at all seasons, without ceasing.**

**Luke 18:1** Then Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should always pray and not give up.

**Ephesians 6:18** And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

**1 Thessalonians 5:17** pray continually;

A Christian should breathe an atmosphere of prayer. Faith in God always has an upward look. True trust in God is constantly crystallizing into definite prayer to God.

430.050.000 Torrey: p428, T:V

**Topic 50: Where to Pray**

430.050.010 Torrey: p429, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: We should pray in secret, in a private place.**

**Matthew 6:6** But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you.

Shut in alone with God, the world shut out. There is a temptation when prayer is offered in presence of others to think of what observers are thinking of us. True prayer is taken up with God, not with men. The especial form of this danger which Christ is guarding against in this passage is that of ostentatious piety, hypocrisy, praying to be seen by men. The Heavenly Father is "your Father who is *in secret*," "Your Father who sees in secret." Every one should have a secret place to meet God, a place in which he is absolutely alone with God.

430.050.020      Torrey: p429, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: Jesus often went into the mountains to be alone to pray.**

**Matthew 14:23** After he had dismissed them, he went up on a mountainside by himself to pray. When evening came, he was there alone,

**Luke 6:12** One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.

**Luke 9:28** About eight days after Jesus said this, he took Peter, John and James with him and went up onto a mountain to pray.

The primary purpose of His seeking this place to pray seems to have been that He might be alone with God. The mountains were His "secret" place. Further than this the mountains, in their majesty, seem to bring God wonderfully near to us and us wonderfully near to God.

430.050.030      Torrey: p429, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: Jesus went into a solitary place to pray.**

**Mark 1:35** Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, where he prayed.

The purpose of this is essentially the same as in Points 10 and 20.

430.050.040      Torrey: p429, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: The prisoner should pray in prison.**

**Acts 16:25** About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and the other prisoners were listening to them.

Doubtless some of the most acceptable and effective prayers that God has ever heard have ascended to Him from prison cells. Prayer transforms a prison cell into a portal of heaven.

430.050.050      Torrey: p430, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: We may pray to God in the very jaws of death.**

**Jonah 2:2** He said: "In my distress I called to the LORD, and he answered me. From the depths of the grave I called for help, and you listened to my cry.

430.050.060      Torrey: p430, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: We should pray to God in the assembly of believers.**



**John 17:1** After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: "Father, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you."

430.050.070      Torrey: p430, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: We should pray to God in the presence of the unsaved.**

**Acts 27:35** After he said this, he took some bread and gave thanks to God in front of them all. Then he broke it and began to eat.

In doing so we must ever be on guard against praying to be seen and heard of men. By far the greater part of our praying should be in secret. But there should be public acknowledgement of our sense of dependence upon God.

430.050.080      Torrey: p430, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: We should pray in every place.**

**1 Timothy 2:8** I want men everywhere to lift up holy hands in prayer, without anger or disputing.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 430

---

### PRAYER

### What to Pray For

430.060.000     Torrey: p430, T:VI  
Topic 60: What to Pray For

#### PRAYERS RELATING TO GOD

430.060.010     Torrey: p430, T:VI, P:1  
**POINT 10: We should pray for the hallowing of God's name.**

**Matthew 6:9** This, then, is how you should pray: "Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name," [i.e., 'May Your name should be revered.']

The supreme desire of every believer's heart should be that God be duly honored and revered. This should be the highest motive in all our prayers. The chief purpose of all our prayers should be that God may be glorified in granting our petitions.

**John 17:1** After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: "Father, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you."

**John 12:27-28** [27] Now my heart is troubled, and what shall I say? "Father, save me from this hour"? No, it was for this very reason I came to this hour. [28] Father, glorify your name! Then a voice came from heaven, "I have glorified it, and will glorify it again."

How deep and intense is your desire that God's name may be hallowed, and how often do you really pray for this? To what extent is this the ruling motive of your prayers?

430.060.020     Torrey: p431, T:VI, P:2  
**POINT 20: We should pray for the coming of God's kingdom.**

**Matthew 6:10** your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

God's kingdom will surely come anyway, but our prayers will hasten the coming of that kingdom. Little do most of us realize how far our prayers go in hastening the coming of God's kingdom, and how far our neglect of prayer goes in retarding the coming of that kingdom. The coming of God's kingdom

is one of the intensest desires of the true believer's heart. Yet this prayer is often uttered thoughtlessly and mechanically.

430.060.030     Torrey: p431, T:VI, P:3

**POINT 30: We should pray for the coming of God's king, Jesus.**

**Revelation 22:20** He who testifies to these things says, "Yes, I am coming soon." Amen. Come, Lord Jesus.

The kingdom will never come until the King comes. Yet there are many who have prayed often that the kingdom of God would come, who have never prayed once that the King would come. This prayer stands as the climax of Christian aspiration. It is the final prayer of the Bible. The whole revelation of the Book leads up to this. How often have you prayed for this?

430.060.040     Torrey: p431, T:VI, P:4

**POINT 40: We should pray that God's will be done on earth as in heaven.**

**Matthew 6:10** your kingdom come, your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

God's will is the most desirable thing in the universe to the true child of God.

**John 4:34** "My food," said Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work."

He wishes it done in himself, but not only in himself, but everywhere and in every person and thing. No other prayer rings out quite so heartily from an understanding soul as this: "Thy will be done."

430.060.050     Torrey: p431, T:VI, P:5

**POINT 50: We should pray for the reviving of God's work and God's people.**

**Habakkuk 3:2** LORD, I have heard of your fame; I stand in awe of your deeds, O LORD. Renew them in our day, in our time make them known; in wrath remember mercy.

**Psalms 85:6** Will you not revive us again, that your people may rejoice in you?

There is much prayer for revival in these days, but how much of that prayer is governed by the thought that it is **God's** work and **God's** people that must be revived? How much of our concern is, because it is **God's** work that is languishing and **God's** people that are fainting? Far too often, it is only the interests of man that are to be subserved by a revival, that we have in view in our prayers and efforts for revival. Prayer for the reviving of **God's** work and **God's** people is a prayer that God is especially pleased to answer. All through the centuries of Israel's history, and the Church's history, God has granted His reviving grace in answer to prayer. Prayer has been the most prominent human element in great revivals. It has been back of everything else. There have been extraordinary revivals without extraordinary preaching; there have never been extraordinary preaching; there have never been extraordinary revivals without extraordinary praying.

430.060.060     Torrey: p432, T:VI, P:6

**POINT 60: We should pray to the Lord of the harvest that He send forth laborers for His end-time harvest.**

**Matthew 9:38** Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field.

How often and how earnestly have you prayed this prayer? Christ has given us a very urgent

command to do so. Have you obeyed it? There was never a time when there was a greater need for laborers than today. The fields are white and open to the harvesters as perhaps never before in the history of the Church and the world. The way to get the right sort of laborers is to pray for them. There are a great many professed laborers in the Lord's harvest in these days whom He surely never sent. The way to get the right laborers for any particular field is to pray for them.

Compare **Acts 1:24-25** [24] Then they prayed, "Lord, you know everyone's heart. Show us which of these two you have chosen [25] to take over this apostolic ministry, which Judas left to go where he belongs.

If Paul and Barnabas had taken to God in prayer the matter of whether Mark was God's man to take with them on their second missionary journey, instead of trying to settle it themselves, it is quite certain there would never have been occasion to write one of the saddest verses in the Bible.

**Acts 15:39-40** [39] They had such a sharp disagreement that they parted company. Barnabas took Mark and sailed for Cyprus, [40] but Paul chose Silas and left, commended by the brothers to the grace of the Lord.

Many another bitter separation among brethren over ministers could have been avoided in the same way.

430.060.070      Torrey: p433, T:VI, P:7

**POINT 70: We should pray for a door of utterance to be opened for those who preach the Word.**

**Colossians 4:3** And pray for us, too, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains.

That is the way to get open doors, ask for them. There are few more pitiable sights than men who believe God has called them to preach who can find no open door. True prayer to God to open a door, and a willingness to enter the door God opens, would solve the difficulty. If there is any place where the Gospel ought to be preached, but where there is no open door, pray for it. Paul was in a most unlikely place to find an open door when he made this request. He was in prison, but God heard the prayer and Paul entered a door to an audience to whom he is still preaching. Many a door in heathen lands seemingly closed and barred against the Gospel, has been opened in the same way. Prayer to God will open more doors than appeals to human governments.

430.060.080      Torrey: p433, T:VI, P:8

**POINT 80: We should pray for utterance to be given to ministers of th Word in opening their mouths, to make known with boldness the mystery of the Gospel, that in it they may speak boldly, as they ought to speak.**

**Ephesians 6:19-20** [19] Pray also for me, that whenever I open my mouth, words may be given me so that I will fearlessly make known the mystery of the gospel, [20] for which I am an ambassador in chains. Pray that I may declare it fearlessly, as I should.

Not only open doors are needed, but open mouths to enter the opened doors. Ministers of the Word greatly need boldness in this time-serving and compromising age, and in all ages, and God's children should be in constant prayer that ministers of the Word may have this needed boldness. If even fearless Paul felt the need of prayer along this line, how much more do ordinary men need it. There are plenty today to criticize the timidity of preachers of the Word, but how many are there who are in

constant and earnest prayer that they may be given utterance, to make known with boldness the mystery of the gospel? Praying will accomplish far more along this line than grumbling and criticizing.

**Acts 4:29, 31** [29] Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. [31] After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.

430.060.090      Torrey: p434, T:VI, P:9

**POINT 90: We should pray for ministers of the Word, that the Word of the Lord may run and be glorified.**

**2 Thessalonians 3:1** Finally, brothers, pray for us that the message of the Lord may spread rapidly and be honored, just as it was with you.

We complain of the slow progress of the Word. Are we praying that it may run?

430.060.100      Torrey: p434, T:VI, P:10

**POINT 100: We should pray that God;s ministers may be clothed with righteousness.**

**Psalms 132:9** May your priests be clothed with righteousness; may your saints sing for joy.

The text applies primarily to priests, and the preacher of the Word is, strictly speaking, no more a priest than any other believer; but he does in a special way represent God, and God's honor is involved in his walk. We may then quite legitimately apply to him this petition for the Old Testament representative of God. We should desire and pray for the righteous walk of those who represent God. This is sadly needed in this day when so many of them are falling into sin, and when the enemies of the Lord are so glorying in their downfall. We live in a perilous time, and we do well to pray for all saints, but especially for those in whose steadfast righteousness God is specially honored, and in whose fall God is particularly dishonored. Let us often and earnestly pray that God's ministers be clothed with righteousness.

## C: PRAYERS FOR SPIRITUAL BLESSINGS

430.060.110      Torrey: p435, T:VI, P:11

**POINT 110: We should pray for forgiveness of our sins.**

**Matthew 6:12** Forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.

**Psalms 51:1** Have mercy on me, O God, according to your unfailing love; according to your great compassion blot out my transgressions.

**Luke 18:13** But the tax collector stood at a distance. He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast and said, 'God, have mercy on me, a sinner.'

**Hosea 14:2** Take words with you and return to the LORD. Say to him: "Forgive all our sins and receive us graciously, that we may offer the fruit of our lips."

**Exodus 34:9** "O Lord, if I have found favor in your eyes," he said, "then let the Lord go with us. Although this is a stiff-necked people, forgive our wickedness and our sin, and take us as your inheritance."

**Exodus 32:31-32** [31] So Moses went back to the LORD and said, "Oh, what a great sin these people have committed! They have made themselves gods of gold. [32] But now, please forgive their sin -- but if not, then blot me out of the book you have written."

**1 Kings 8:47-50** [46] "When they sin against you -- for there is no one who does not sin -- and you become angry with them and give them over to the enemy, who takes them captive to his own land, far away or near; [47] and if they have a change of heart in the land where they are held captive, and repent and plead with you in the land of their conquerors and say, 'We have sinned, we have done wrong, we have acted wickedly'; [48] and if they turn back to you with all their heart and soul in the land of their enemies who took them captive, and pray to you toward the land you gave their fathers, toward the city you have chosen and the temple I have built for your Name; [49] then from heaven, your dwelling place, hear their prayer and their plea, and uphold their cause. [50] And forgive your people, who have sinned against you; forgive all the offenses they have committed against you, and cause their conquerors to show them mercy;

**Acts 8:22** Repent of this wickedness and pray to the Lord. Perhaps he will forgive you for having such a thought in your heart.

It is sometimes said that believers ought not to pray for forgiveness of sin, but simply to confess their sins. That comes from forcing **1 John 1:9** (If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.) beyond what it says, and contradicts the plain teachings of the Word elsewhere. It is true that God has provided pardon for all the believer's sins on the ground of the all-sufficing atoning blood of Christ, but what God has thus provided we appropriate to ourselves by confession of sin and prayer for pardon. Prayer for pardon is a proper acknowledgement to God of our guiltiness. Prayers for pardon are more frequent in the Bible than prayers for almost anything else. Of course, we ought not to pray again and again for the forgiveness of some sin that we have already laid before God, and that has thus been put away forever.

430.060.120      Torrey: p435, T:VI, P:12

**POINT 120: We should pray to the Lord to search us and try us.**

**Psalms 139:23-24** [23] Search me, O God, and know my heart; test me and know my anxious thoughts. [24] See if there is any offensive way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

The true child of God will desire that every evil way in him be searched out and brought to light. This work can never be thoroughly and satisfactorily done by any process of personal self-examination. God must do it, and He does it in answer to prayer. It needs to be done frequently. Sin and selfishness and carnality and worldliness surround us as the very atmosphere we breathe, and are constantly creeping into our hearts and lives unawares. Each day should close by our going into God's presence and laying our inmost lives and outward walk before him, and asking Him to search them through and through, and to lay bare to us whatever in them is hateful to Him. This will be to us a painful, but a salutary process.

430.060.130      Torrey: p436, T:VI, P:13

**POINT 130: We should pray for cleansing from sin.**

**Psalms 51:7** Cleanse me with hyssop, and I will be clean; wash me, and I will be whiter than snow.

**Psalms 19:12** Who can discern his errors? Forgive my hidden faults.

The Hebrew verb translated "cleans" in both of these passages means to "clear" or "acquit." This prayer is a prayer for pardon -- cleansing from guilt -- rather than for cleansing from the presence of sin.

430.060.140     Torrey: p436, T:VI, P:14

**POINT 140: We should pray for God to create in us a clean heart.**

**Psalms 51:10** Create in me a pure heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me.

It is vain for us to try to cleanse our own heart. A clean heart requires a creative act that God alone can perform. He will do it in answer to prayer. He will create in us a heart that loves righteousness and hates sin.

430.060.150     Torrey: p436, T:VI, P:15

**POINT 150: We should pray for God to hold us up.**

**Psalms 119:117** Uphold me, and I will be delivered; I will always have regard for your decrees.

If God holds us up we "shall be safe." We are never safe unless God does hold us up. It is a hopeless task to try to stand alone. The way is too slippery, and not one of us is sure-footed. He "who thinks he stands" needs to "take heed lest he fall."

**1 Corinthians 10:12-13** [12] So, if you think you are standing firm, be careful that you don't fall! [13] No temptation has seized you except what is common to man. And God is faithful; he will not let you be tempted beyond what you can bear. But when you are tempted, he will also provide a way out so that you can stand up under it.

The only sure way of taking heed is by humble, honest and earnest prayer. God is abundantly able and willing to hold us up.

430.060.160     Torrey: p437, T:VI, P:16

**POINT 160: We should pray to be kept back from, and delivered from the dominion of presumptuous sins.**

**Psalms 19:13** Keep your servant also from willful sins; may they not rule over me. Then will I be blameless, innocent of great transgression.

the word here translated presumptuous, means primarily boiling, then swelling, insolent, arrogant, proud. Pride and arrogance are common to us all. God alone can keep us back from them.

430.060.170     Torrey: p437, T:VI, P:17

**POINT 170: We should pray that God will not let us wander from His commandments.**

**Psalms 119:10** I seek you with all my heart; do not let me stray from your commands.

"Prone to wander" is what every child of Adam is. Unless we are constantly looking to God to keep us from wandering we are sure to go astray from the straight path of His Word. But He is very ready to keep us from wandering if we look to Him to do it.

430.060.180     Torrey: p437, T:VI, P:18

**POINT 180: We should pray that we not be brought into temptation, nor enter into temptation.**



**Matthew 6:13** And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.

**Mark 14:38** Watch and pray so that you will not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing, but the body is weak."

This is the prayer that springs from a true knowledge of self. If we have true humility we will recognize our own weakness and this petition will be often upon our lips. No man who has any true knowledge of himself will court temptation. He will flee from it and pray God not to bring him into it. Many a man who has made seemingly great attainments in the spiritual life, has fallen because he has lost the spirit of this prayer. It is one of the most suggestive petitions of the wonderful prayer which Jesus taught His disciples.

430.060.190      Torrey: p438, T:VI, P:19

**POINT 190: We should pray to be delivered from the Evil One.**

**Matthew 6:13** And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.

Anyone who carefully and candidly studies the New Testament and human history must be convinced of the existence and awful power, cunning and malignity of the Evil One. We must realize that our only security against his wiles and his power is in constant prayer to God.

430.060.200      Torrey: p438, T:VI, P:20

**POINT 200: We should pray for the Lord to guard our mouths.**

**Psalms 141:3** Set a guard over my mouth, O LORD; keep watch over the door of my lips.

This is the only way in which our speech can be governed.

**James 3:8** but no man can tame the tongue. It is a restless evil, full of deadly poison.

But God can govern the tongue and will in answer to prayer.

Under the immediately preceding Points 170-200 we have a fourfold keeping: our lips kept from uttering what they ought not, our feet kept from wandering where they ought not, and we ourselves kept from doing what we ought not and from all the power of the enemy.

430.060.210      Torrey: p438, T:VI, P:21

**POINT 210: We should pray for Jehovah to teach us His way, the way of His statutes, His path, to do His will.**

**Psalms 86:11** Teach me your way, O LORD, and I will walk in your truth; give me an undivided heart, that I may fear your name.

**Psalms 119:33** Teach me, O LORD, to follow your decrees; then I will keep them to the end.

**Psalms 25:4-5** [4] Show me your ways, O LORD, teach me your paths; [5] guide me in your truth and teach me, for you are God my Savior, and my hope is in you all day long.

**Psalms 143:10** Teach me to do your will, for you are my God; may your good Spirit lead me on level ground.

We will never know His way nor how to do His will until He Himself teaches us, and He will not teach us unless we ask Him to. We can, however, ask Him with absolute confidence that He will teach us.

430.060.220     Torrey: p438, T:VI, P:22

**POINT 220: We should pray for the Lord to teach us to number our days that we may get a heart of wisdom.**

**Psalms 90:12** Teach us to number our days aright, that we may gain a heart of wisdom.

430.060.230     Torrey: p439, T:VI, P:23

**POINT 230: We should pray to be taught to pray.**

**Luke 11:1** One day Jesus was praying in a certain place. When he finished, one of his disciples said to him, "Lord, teach us to pray, just as John taught his disciples."

"We know not how to pray as we ought," but the Lord is just as ready to teach us today by His Spirit (**Romans 8:26** In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express.), and by His Word, as He was to teach His disciples when here, by word by mouth.

430.060.240     Torrey: p440, T:VI, P:24

**POINT 240: We should pray for the Lord to open our eyes to behold wondrous things out of His own Word.**

**Psalms 119:18** Open my eyes that I may see wonderful things in your law.

We shall never see nor appreciate the wondrous things of God's Word until God Himself opens our eyes to behold them. This He does in answer to prayer. Prayer gives a keenness of perception to spiritual beauty of which the prayerless man never dreams. No amount of study of Hebrew or Greek, or mere intellectual study of any sort, will open spiritual eyes blinded by sin. The prayerless eye can no more see the spiritual beauty of God's truth revealed in the pages of the Bible, through the spectacles of linguistic knowledge, than the blind natural eye can see the beauties of the natural world through any spectacles no matter how scientifically constructed. There must be natural sight to discern natural beauty. There must be spiritual sight to discern spiritual beauty. A man who has sight can see more beauty without spectacles, than a sightless man can with the best glasses ever constructed. So the man who has spiritual sight can see more beauty in the Word of God without the aid of scholarship, than the spiritually sightless man can with all the aids of the most recent and most approved scholarship. There is many a modern Bartimeus occupying a theological professorship who needs to cry:

**Mark 10:51** "What do you want me to do for you?" Jesus asked him. The blind man said, "Rabbi, I want to see."

But they go on, the blind leading the blind, and both are falling into the ditch of destructive criticism. Only prayer will open our eyes to a real appreciation of the Bible. One can see more of its beauty and learn more of its truth in an hour at the feet of Jesus, than in four years at the feet of men, who, professing themselves to be wise, are become fools.

**Romans 1:22** Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools

Every minister and every believer needs to take a course in that Seminary in which one matriculates

by prayer. The most ignorant and most learned child of God will find that the Bible opens up wonderfully by prayer. One ought never to open his Bible, even for a few moments' study, without at least breathing to God the substance of the Psalmist's prayer.

430.060.250     Torrey: p440, T:VI, P:25

**POINT 250: We should pray to be led and guided.**

**Psalms 31:3** Since you are my rock and my fortress, for the sake of your name lead and guide me.

**Psalms 27:11** Teach me your way, O LORD; lead me in a straight path because of my oppressors.

**Psalms 139:24** See if there is any offensive way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

Who knows the way he ought to take? Perils are on every hand, but there is ever an unerring hand within reach to lead us safely on. We grasp that hand by prayer. We need God's guidance at every step of the way. We cannot altogether trust the wisest human guides. We do not need to. It is our privilege not only to ask God to lead us, but to lead us "in a plain path." He is ready to lead us in the way everlasting.

430.060.260     Torrey: p440, T:VI, P:26

**POINT 260: We should pray for a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Ephesians 1:17-19** [17] I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better. [18] I pray also that the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in the saints,

The only way to really know Christ is through that spirit of wisdom which God gives in answer to prayer. No amount of unaided searching will ever find Him out.

The result of receiving this "spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him" will be, that we shall have the eyes of our hearts enlightened so that we shall know what is the hope of His calling, what are the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe.

430.060.270     Torrey: p441, T:VI, P:27

**POINT 270: We should pray to be filled with the knowledge of His will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding.**

**Colossians 1:9-10** [9] For this reason, since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of his will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding.

430.060.270a     Torrey: p441, T:VI, P:27

**POINT 270a: We should pray to live a life worthy of the Lord and pleasing to Him in every way, bearing fruit in every good work, and growing in the knowledge of the Lord.**

**Colossians 1:10** And we pray this in order that you may live a life worthy of the Lord and may please him in every way: bearing fruit in every good work, growing in the knowledge of God,

This prayer is worthy of deep and careful meditation.

430.060.280      Torrey: p441, T:VI, P:28

**POINT 280: We should pray that the Father will strengthen us with power. This power is the power of the Spirit dwelling in our inner being.**

**Ephesians 3:16** [16] I pray that out of his glorious riches he may strengthen you with power through his Spirit in your inner being, [17] so that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith. And I pray that you, being rooted and established in love, [18] may have power, together with all the saints, to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ, [19] and to know this love that surpasses knowledge -- that you may be filled to the measure of all the fullness of God.

The result of the inward strengthening granted will be:

**First:** that Christ will dwell in our hearts through faith.

**Second:** that we, being rooted and grounded in love, shall be made strong to apprehend together with all the saints what is the breadth and length and height and depth, and to know the love of Christ which passes knowledge

**Third:** that we shall be filled to the full with the fullness of God.

Surely that is a glorious and inexhaustible prayer.

430.060.290      Torrey: p441, T:VI, P:29

**POINT 290: We should pray for the Lord to make us increase and abound in love toward one another and toward all men.**

**1 Thessalonians 3:12-13** [12] May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other and for everyone else, just as ours does for you. [13] May he strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the presence of our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones.

Many of us bewail our lack of love. This verse indicates the way to get it. Ask for it. In this way He will establish our hearts blameless in holiness before our God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

430.060.300      Torrey: p442, T:VI, P:30

**POINT 300: We should pray for the God of peace to sanctify us wholly, and that our spirit and soul and body be preserved entire, without blame at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:23** May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The word for "wholly" in this passage is an extremely strong word; it is a double word, and means "perfect in every respect," absolutely perfect. Nothing short of absolute perfection will satisfy the true child of God. We may have already attained a relative perfection, a condition of maturity, but we pray for absolute perfection, and in answer to our prayers it shall be ours at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Philippians 3:15** All of us who are mature should take such a view of things. And if on some

point you think differently, that too God will make clear to you.

**1 Corinthians 2:6** We do, however, speak a message of wisdom among the mature, but not the wisdom of this age or of the rulers of this age, who are coming to nothing.

**2 Corinthians 13:11** Finally, brothers, good-by. Aim for perfection, listen to my appeal, be of one mind, live in peace. And the God of love and peace will be with you.

QUESTION: Why do you say "spirit *and* soul"; don't those words mean the same thing?

ANSWER: No; Man *is* a spirit, he *has* a soul, and he *lives* in a body. By contrast, God, the angels, and demons are spirits, but they don't have souls. (Note: this is an extremely technical concept that is not particularly important for understanding Christian teachings.)

430.060.310 Torrey: p442, T:VI, P:31

**POINT 310: We should pray for personal nearness to and communion with God and the glad contemplation of His beauty.**

**Psalms 27:4** One thing I ask of the LORD, this is what I seek: that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to gaze upon the beauty of the LORD and to seek him in his temple.

This was the Psalmist's supreme request. He longed not so much for Jehovah's gifts as for Jehovah Himself.

430.060.320 Torrey: p442, T:VI, P:32

**POINT 320: We should pray for the gift of the Holy Spirit.**

**Luke 11:13** If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

**Acts 8:15-16** [15] When they arrived, they prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit, [16] because the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon any of them; they had simply been baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus.

**John 4:10** Jesus answered her, "If you knew the gift of God and who it is that asks you for a drink, you would have asked him and he would have given you living water."

**John 7:37-39** [37] On the last and greatest day of the Feast, Jesus stood and said in a loud voice, "If anyone is thirsty, let him come to me and drink. [38] Whoever believes in me, as the Scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from within him." [39] By this he meant the Spirit, whom those who believed in him were later to receive. Up to that time the Spirit had not been given, since Jesus had not yet been glorified.

430.060.330 Torrey: p443, T:VI, P:33

**POINT 330: When the joy of the salvation of the Lord has been lost, we should pray for its restoration.**

**Psalms 51:12** Restore to me the joy of your salvation and grant me a willing spirit, to sustain me.

#### **D. PRAYERS FOR TEMPORAL BLESSINGS**

430.060.340 Torrey: p443, T:VI, P:34

**POINT 340: We should pray for wisdom.**

**James 1:5** If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.

This is not altogether a temporal blessing, but this promise covers wisdom in temporal matters as well as in spiritual. We have a right to ask God for wisdom in all the affairs of life.

Compare **Proverbs 3:6** in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight.

430.060.350     Torrey: p443, T:VI, P:35

**POINT 350: We should pray for our daily bread.**

**Matthew 6:11** Give us today our daily bread.

**Luke 11:3** Give us each day our daily bread.

The exact meaning of the word translated "daily" is hard to determine, as it is used nowhere else, except in the parallel passage of Luke 11:3. Various translations have been suggested, such as "sufficient bread", "bread proper for sustenance", "needful bread", "bread for the coming day." They amount to about the same thing. In any case the thought is that we are to depend upon God from day to day to supply our physical need as it arises. The petition does not give us any warrant to ask God for stores for future need, but it does invite us to ask God for sufficient supplies for each day's need as it arises. In the Old Testament we find prayers for large earthly prosperity which were answered.

**Genesis 27:28** May God give you of heaven's dew and of earth's richness -- an abundance of grain and new wine.

**1 Chronicles 4:10** Jabez cried out to the God of Israel, "Oh, that you would bless me and enlarge my territory! Let your hand be with me, and keep me from harm so that I will be free from pain." And God granted his request.

**Genesis 28:3** May God Almighty bless you and make you fruitful and increase your numbers until you become a community of peoples.

430.060.360     Torrey: p443, T:VI, P:36

**POINT 360: We should pray to the Lord for healing in physical weakness.**

**James 5:14-16** [14] Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord. [15] And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise him up. If he has sinned, he will be forgiven. [16] Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

**Psalms 103:2-3** [2] Praise the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits -- [3] who forgives all your sins and heals all your diseases,

In Judges 16:28, we find Samson praying for extraordinary physical strength for an extraordinary emergency. The strength was granted, and God today gives men extraordinary strength for extraordinary emergencies. This fact gives us no warrant for tempting God by overwork.



**Judges 16:28** Then Samson prayed to the LORD, "O Sovereign LORD, remember me. O God, please strengthen me just once more, and let me with one blow get revenge on the Philistines for my two eyes."

430.060.370      Torrey: p444, T:VI, P:37

**POINT 370: We should pray to God for keeping from the wicked who spoil us and the deadly enemies who compass us about.**

**Psalms 17:8-9** [8] Keep me as the apple of your eye; hide me in the shadow of your wings [9] from the wicked who assail me, from my mortal enemies who surround me.

This will afford us surer protection in a lawless city or in the perils of the foreign field than carrying firearms for self-defense.

**Isaiah 19:20** It will be a sign and witness to the LORD Almighty in the land of Egypt. When they cry out to the LORD because of their oppressors, he will send them a savior and defender, and he will rescue them.

**Psalms 59:1** Deliver me from my enemies, O God; protect me from those who rise up against me.

**2 Thessalonians 3:2** And pray that we may be delivered from wicked and evil men, for not everyone has faith.

430.060.380      Torrey: p444, T:VI, P:38

**POINT 380: We should pray for the peace of Jerusalem.**

**Psalms 122:6** Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: "May those who love you be secure."

430.060.390      Torrey: p444, T:VI, P:39

**POINT 390: We should pray for the peace of the city in which God has placed us.**

**Jeremiah 29:7** Also, seek the peace and prosperity of the city to which I have carried you into exile. Pray to the LORD for it, because if it prospers, you too will prosper.

Compare: **Isaiah 62:6** I have posted watchmen on your walls, O Jerusalem; they will never be silent day or night. You who call on the LORD, give yourselves no rest,

**Psalms 51:18** In your good pleasure make Zion prosper; build up the walls of Jerusalem.

It is doubtful if we can accomplish much in some cities by our votes, but there is no city in which we cannot accomplish much by our prayers. There is a place where the influence of a child of God counts more than at the polling-booth or the caucus -- that is at the throne of grace. There are many today urging Christians to vote as they pray. The average twenty-first century Christian needs more to be urged to pray as he votes. If he were to vote as he prayed he would not vote at all. Prayer needs to be made a power which it is not in municipal affairs.

430.060.400      Torrey: p444, T:VI, P:40

**POINT 400: We should pray for anything which is according to the will of God.**



**1 John 5:14** This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us.

The question arises, How are we to know what is according to the will of God? The answer is simple: By the promises of His Word, and by the leadings of His Holy Spirit. Whenever I find God promising anything in His Word I know it is His will to give it. Whenever the Holy Spirit leads my hart to pray for anything, I know that this also is according to the will of God.

**Romans 8:26-27** [26] In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express. [27] And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit intercedes for the saints in accordance with God's will.

430.060.410      Torrey: p445, T:VI, P:41

**POINT 410: We should pray for everything we need.**

**Philippians 4:6, 19** [6] Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. [19] And my God will meet all your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus.

It is our privilege to live a life absolutely free from anxious thought. This is only possible by taking every need, great and small, to the Father in trustful prayer. Then the peace of God which passes all understanding shall guard our hearts and thoughts in Christ Jesus.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 430

---

### PRAYER How to Pray

430.070.000     Torrey: p445, T:VII

**Topic 70: How to Pray**

430.070.010     Torrey: p445, T:VII, P:1

**POINT 10: We should pray in the name of Jesus Christ.**

**John 14:13-14** [13] And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. [14] You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

**John 15:16** You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit -- fruit that will last. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.

QUESTION: What does it mean to pray in the name of Christ?

ANSWER:

**Luke 24:47** and repentance and forgiveness of sins will be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

Compare: **Acts 10:43** All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name.

**Matthew 7:22** Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and in your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?'

**Mark 9:38-39** [38] "Teacher," said John, "we saw a man driving out demons in your name and we told him to stop, because he was not one of us." [39] "Do not stop him," Jesus said. "No one who does a miracle in my name can in the next moment say anything bad about me, [40] for whoever is not against us is for us."

**Acts 3:6** Then Peter said, "Silver or gold I do not have, but what I have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk."

**1 Corinthians 6:11** And that is what some of you were. But you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

**Ephesians 5:20** always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Colossians 3:17** And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

**James 5:14** Is any one of you sick? He should call the elders of the church to pray over him and anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord.

**John 16:23** In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.

To pray in the name of Christ is to pray relying upon what Christ is and has done, to pray on the ground of Jesus Christ's acceptability with the Father. When I go to a bank with my own name on the check I ask money in my own name, and if I have that much money there I get what I ask. When I go to a bank with another man's name on the check, I ask in his name, and it matters nothing whether I have money in the bank or not. If he has, I get it. Jesus Christ has given to believers in Him the right to put His name upon their checks. We have nothing in the bank of Heaven, no claim on it. He has unlimited credit there. If we ask God in our own name, on the ground of any claim we have upon Him, we will get nothing. But if we come renouncing any claim of our own and simply trusting in the claims of Christ, we will get "whatsoever we ask."

The distinctive characteristic of Christian prayer is that it is prayer in the name of Christ. It is that which radically distinguishes Christian prayer from pagan prayer.

430.070.020     Torrey: p446, T:VII, P:2

**POINT 20: We should call upon the Lord "in truth."**

**Psalms 145:18** The LORD is near to all who call on him, to all who call on him in truth.

QUESTION: What is it to call "in truth?"

ANSWER: The primary meaning of the word translated "truth" is "firmness", then "faithfulness", then "truth as opposed to falsehood", "good faith", "sincerity as opposed to hypocrisy." This latter is evidently the meaning. Compare the following:

**Joshua 24:14** Now fear the LORD and serve him with all faithfulness. Throw away the gods your forefathers worshiped beyond the River and in Egypt, and serve the LORD.

**1 Samuel 12:24** But be sure to fear the LORD and serve him faithfully with all your heart; consider what great things he has done for you.

**1 Kings 2:4** and that the LORD may keep his promise to me: "If your descendants watch how they live, and if they walk faithfully before me with all their heart and soul, you will never fail to have a man on the throne of Israel."

**Isaiah 10:20** In that day the remnant of Israel, the survivors of the house of Jacob, will no longer

rely on him who struck them down but will truly rely on the LORD, the Holy One of Israel.

To call upon the Lord in truth is to ask Him for that which we really desire and to really depend upon Him to give it. There is much prayer that is not in truth. People constantly ask God for things which they do not really desire. They also constantly ask Him for things which they do not expect Him to give, and which they are not depending upon Him to provide. Before asking God for anything we should ask ourselves, Do I really desire this? and then, Do really expect God to give it? and AM I depending upon Him for it? ... There is very much that is called prayer that is really profanity, taking the sacred and awful name of God in vain.

(Reviser's Note: The common interpretation of the word "awful" is "horrible", but that is not the sense in which Torrey means it here. The root of the word "awful" is "full of awe." This is similar to, but not quite the same as "awe-inspiring.")

430.070.030      Torrey: p447, T:VII, P:3

**POINT 30: We should pray to the Lord with all our heart and all our soul.**

**Jeremiah 29:12-13** [12] Then you will call upon me and come and pray to me, and I will listen to you. [13] You will seek me and find me when you seek me with all your heart.

**Deuteronomy 4:29** But if from there you seek the LORD your God, you will find him if you look for him with all your heart and with all your soul.

Many prayers are sincere so far as they go, but the whole heart is not in them. We must not expect such prayers to have much power with God. When our whole heart is in the asking, His whole heart will be in the giving.

430.070.040      Torrey: p447, T:VII, P:4

**POINT 40: We should pray earnestly -- intensely.**

**Acts 12:5** So Peter was kept in prison, but the church was earnestly praying to God for him.

The word translated "earnestly" in this passage is a very strong word. It means, literally, "stretched-out-ly." It is a pictorial word. It pictures the mind stretched out in intensity of desire. The same word is used of our Lord's praying in Luke where, the intensity of His agony:

**Luke 22:44** And being in anguish, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was like drops of blood falling to the ground.

It is the prayer into which the whole soul goes in an intensity of desire that lays hold upon God. These indifferent, heartless, bloodless prayers that we offer, and soon forget what we ask for, count little with Him. Paul called upon the believers in Rome to "strive together" with him in their prayers to God.

**Romans 15:30** I urge you, brothers, by our Lord Jesus Christ and by the love of the Spirit, to join me in my struggle by praying to God for me.

The word for "struggle" means literally, "to enter a contest", "to contend", "to endeavor with strenuous zeal." It is the word from which our word "agonize" is derived. There seems to be little praying of this sort in our day. Some fancy it is a mark of faith to take things easy in prayer as well as elsewhere. They call it "the rest of faith." This is evidently a form of faith the Lord Jesus had not learned.

**Hebrews 5:7** During the days of Jesus' life on earth, he offered up prayers and petitions with loud cries and tears to the one who could save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission.

If this kind of praying is rare, it has power today when it is found, even as it had in the olden time.

Compare **Genesis 32:26** Then the man said, "Let me go, for it is daybreak." But Jacob replied, "I will not let you go unless you bless me."

430.070.050      Torrey: p448, T:VII, P:5

**POINT 50: We should pray with steadfast continuance -- perseverance.**

**Romans 12:12** Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, faithful in prayer.

**Colossians 4:2** Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful.

**Luke 18:1-8** [1] Then Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should always pray and not give up. [2] He said: "In a certain town there was a judge who neither feared God nor cared about men. [3] And there was a widow in that town who kept coming to him with the plea, 'Grant me justice against my adversary.' [4] "For some time he refused. But finally he said to himself, 'Even though I don't fear God or care about men, [5] yet because this widow keeps bothering me, I will see that she gets justice, so that she won't eventually wear me out with her coming!' " [6] And the Lord said, "Listen to what the unjust judge says. [7] And will not God bring about justice for his chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night? Will he keep putting them off? [8] I tell you, he will see that they get justice, and quickly. However, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith on the earth?"

The true and earnest prayer will not give up because his petition is not heard the first time. It is a form of spiritual laziness that tries to palm itself off as submission to the will of God, that concludes because we do not get a thing the first time we ask for it that is not the will of God to give it. God often tests our faith and our earnestness.

Compare **Matthew 20:31** The crowd rebuked them and told them to be quiet, but they shouted all the louder, "Lord, Son of David, have mercy on us!"

**Matthew 15:23-28** [23] Jesus did not answer a word. So his disciples came to him and urged him, "Send her away, for she keeps crying out after us." [24] He answered, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel." [25] The woman came and knelt before him. "Lord, help me!" she said. [26] He replied, "It is not right to take the children's bread and toss it to their dogs." [27] "Yes, Lord," she said, "but even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their masters' table." [28] Then Jesus answered, "Woman, you have great faith! Your request is granted." And her daughter was healed from that very hour.

Of course, there are times when we can count the thing we have asked for as already ours, so we need not continue praying.

**John 11:4** When he heard this, Jesus said, "This sickness will not end in death. No, it is for God's glory so that God's Son may be glorified through it."

**1 John 5:14-15** [14] This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything

according to his will, he hears us. [15] And if we know that he hears us -- whatever we ask -- we know that we have what we asked of him.

**Mark 11:24** Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.

Some say it indicates a lack of faith to ask anything a second time, and not take it by simple faith upon the first asking. But Jesus prayed three times for the same thing.

**Matthew 26:44** So he left them and went away once more and prayed the third time, saying the same thing.

430.070.060      Torrey: p449, T:VII, P:6

**POINT 60: We should not use vain repetitions when we pray.**

**Matthew 6:7** And when you pray, do not keep on babbling like pagans, for they think they will be heard because of their many words.

The word here translated "use vain repetitions" means, literally, "to stammer or stutter", and thus to repeat the same thing over and over. The thought is, as the rest of the verse clearly shows, that we are not to keep repeating the same request over and over in the same prayer, as if God saw some merit in each time it was offered, and thus multiplied merit in the frequency with which it was repeated. On the other hand, there is repetition that comes from intense earnestness.

Contrast **1 Kings 18:26** So they took the bull given them and prepared it. Then they called on the name of Baal from morning till noon. "O Baal, answer us!" they shouted. But there was no response; no one answered. And they danced around the altar they had made.

**1 Kings 18:37** Answer me, O LORD, answer me, so these people will know that you, O LORD, are God, and that you are turning their hearts back again.

## == DISCUSSION ==

Repetition is a common practice in the Roman Catholic religion, e.g., "for penance, say ten Our Fathers and ten Hail Marys."

430.070.065      Torrey: no

**POINT 65: We should believe that we have God's attention.**

This analog to vain repetition was demonstrated by Rev. Delaney at a Holy Ghost Conference in Dallas in March 1997.

How many times have you heard prayers such as:

"Father, we come to you today, Father, thanking you, Father, for the blessings we have received from you, Father, and we praise you, Father, ..."

Consider this secular analogy:

"Fred, how are you doing, Fred? Fred, how's your wife, Fred? Fred, how's your son, Fred? Fred, how is your job going, Fred? Fred ...."

430.070.067     Torrey: no

**POINT 67: We should give God a chance to get a word in once in awhile.**

There are different kinds of prayer, e.g., prayers of supplication (asking) and prayers of worship.

Some supplications require a physical answer, e.g., "give us this day our daily bread."

Other supplications require an informational response, e.g., "God, I have been offered a new job, and I have some reservations. Should I take the job or not?" In the previous Point, Fred doesn't have a chance to get in a word edgewise. We can't hear God if we won't stop talking!

Usually, God has one of four responses to a supplication:

- (a) Provide us with a strong feeling in favor of one course of action or another, e.g., the reservations grow to the point where you just know not to take the job.
- (b) Change conditions so that one course of action becomes impossible, e.g., the company withdraws the job offer.
- (c) Change conditions to provide strong encouragement, e.g., your present employer gives you a layoff notice.
- (d) Ignore the prayer, for reasons discussed in other Points.

430.070.070     Torrey: p449, T:VII, P:7

**POINT 70: We should pray with fasting.**

**Daniel 9:3** So I turned to the Lord God and pleaded with him in prayer and petition, in fasting, and in sackcloth and ashes.

**Acts 13:2-3** [2] While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them." [3] So after they had fasted and prayed, they placed their hands on them and sent them off.

This, of course, does not mean that we should fast every time we pray. But there are times of emergency or of special crisis in work, or in our individual lives, when men of downright earnestness will withdraw themselves from even the gratification of natural appetites, that would be perfectly proper under other circumstances, that they may give themselves up wholly to prayer. There is particular power in such prayer. Every great crisis in life and work should be met in that way. On the appropriateness of fasting in the present dispensation see also:

**Matthew 9:15** Jesus answered, "How can the guests of the bridegroom mourn while he is with them? The time will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; then they will fast."

430.070.080     Torrey: p450, T:VII, P:8

**POINT 80: In times when we have wandered from God we should pray with humility of self and renunciation of sin.**

**2 Chronicles 7:14** if my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land.

430.070.090     Torrey: p450, T:VII, P:9

**POINT 90: We should pray with thanksgiving.**

**Philippians 4:6** Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition,



with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.

**Colossians 4:2** Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful.

In approaching God to ask for new blessings we should not neglect to return thanks for blessings already granted. Doubtless one reason why so many of our prayers lack power is because we have neglected to return thanks for blessings already received. God is deeply grieved by this thoughtlessness and ingratitude of which so many of us are guilty.

**Luke 17:17-18** [17] Jesus asked, "Were not all ten cleansed? Where are the other nine? [18] Was no one found to return and give praise to God except this foreigner?"

430.070.100     Torrey: p450, T:VII, P:10

**POINT 100: We should pray in union with others.**

**Matthew 18:19-20** [19] Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. [20] For where two or three come together in my name, there am I with them.

God everywhere emphasizes and blesses the unity of believers and there is especial power in united prayer. Note that the two must not merely agree together to ask, they must agree *concerning the thing* that they ask -- i.e., there must be real unity of desire concerning this specific thing. It is very easy to get someone to unite with me in asking something I desire, but still there may be no unity of desire. The other asks it simply because I wish it. But when the Holy Spirit leads two believing hearts to beat as one concerning some coveted blessing, then there is power, -- when, for example, two persons in a community have a common desire for the outpouring of the Spirit in that community. Whenever you can find another whose heart the Holy Spirit is drawing out in the same direction He does yours, you can approach God with great confidence of obtaining this thing.

430.070.110     Torrey: p451, T:VII, P:11

**POINT 110: We should pray believing.**

**Matthew 21:22** If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.

Believing in this place does not mean a general trust in God, but the unwavering expectation of getting the thing we ask.

**James 1:5-6** [5] If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. [6] But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind.

Indeed, faith goes beyond expecting and reckons the thing asked as already ours. What we thus reckon ours becomes ours in actual experimental possession.

**Mark 11:24** Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.

God delights to honor the faith that counts on Him.

QUESTION: How can we have such faith?

ANSWER:

By the Word of God:

**Romans 10:17** Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ.

Compare: **Romans 4:20-21** [20] Yet he did not waver through unbelief regarding the promise of God, but was strengthened in his faith and gave glory to God, [21] being fully persuaded that God had power to do what he had promised.

By the Holy Spirit's teaching:

**Romans 8:26-27** [26] In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness. We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us with groans that words cannot express. [27] And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit intercedes for the saints in accordance with God's will.

430.070.120     Torrey: p451, T:VII, P:12

**POINT 120: We should pray in the Holy Spirit.**

**Ephesians 6:18** And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.

**Jude 1:20** But you, dear friends, build yourselves up in your most holy faith and pray in the Holy Spirit.

All approach to God should be in the Holy Spirit's power. The true believer has no confidence in the flesh.

**Philippians 3:3-4** [3] For it is we who are the circumcision, we who worship by the Spirit of God, who glory in Christ Jesus, and who put no confidence in the flesh -- [4] though I myself have reasons for such confidence.

The flesh may prompt me to pray for many things. That is no reason for asking them. I should no more follow the promptings of the flesh in praying than in sinning. I should submit every desire to the Holy Spirit, and seek His guidance in prayer. Very much prayer of many excellent people is in the flesh, and is, of course, not answered. Many a minister's longing for a revival, many a wife's longing for the conversion of her husband, is thoroughly carnal. We should pray in the Holy Spirit, under His prompting and guidance. As the disciples said to Jesus during His earthly life, "teach us to pray," so we should look constantly to the "other Paraclete" to teach us to pray and He will.

**John 14:16** [16] And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever -- [17] the Spirit of truth. The world cannot accept him, because it neither sees him nor knows him. But you know him, for he lives with you and will be in you.

**John 16:7** But I tell you the truth: It is for your good that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Counselor will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you.

This thought disposes of all the objections against prayer from the standpoint of its "subjecting the infinite wisdom of God to the foolish whims of finite creatures." Those who thus talk are ignorant of the Bible doctrine of prayer. It disposes also of most of the other objections that the spiritually

superficial and ignorant urge against prevailing prayer.

430.070.130     Torrey: no

**POINT 130: Spirit versus Soul.**

**Romans 8:26** In the same way, the Spirit helps us in our weakness. *We do not know what we ought to pray for, but the Spirit himself intercedes for us* with groans that words cannot express.

=== **DISCUSSION** ===

**John 4:24** *God is [a] spirit*, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.

Man's spirit is non-corporeal (spiritual); it is distinct from his soul, which consists of his intellect (mind), will and emotions. Man's soul is intangible, i.e., it cannot be physically touched, but it is part of "the natural man." Because the natural man is at enmity with God, man's soul **cannot** worship God unless man's spirit **forces** his soul to worship God.

One useful analogy is a computer: (a) your physical body is the physical computer; (b) your spirit is the computer program, (c) the data is your soul -- it is what makes that particular combination different from any other computer with the same computer program.

**Romans 8:7** [7] the sinful mind is hostile to God. It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so. [8] Those controlled by the sinful nature cannot please God.

**1 Thessalonians 5:23** May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole *spirit, soul and body* be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

430.070.140     Torrey: no

**POINT 140: We should pray with specificity.**

When we pray, we should be specific. Consider this from the Lord's Prayer, **Matthew 6:11**:

Do what Give whom Do it when Give what	give us this day our daily bread
<b>there's more</b>	and
Do what Forgive whom Forgive what Condition	forgive us our trespasses as we forgive those who trespass against us
<b>there's more</b>	and

Of course, one must realize that God isn't an "Endless Gift Service." We must not ask for things in greed, lust, etc.

430.080.000     Torrey: p452, T:VIII

## Topic 80: Hindrances to Prayer; or, Why Many Prayers are not Answered

430.080.010 Torrey: p452, T:VIII, P:1

**POINT 10: Prayer is often unanswered because it is offered from a selfish purpose.**

**James 4:3** When you ask, you do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures.

The chief purpose in prayer should be that God may be glorified in the answer. If we ask merely that we may receive for us in our pleasures, or for our own gratification in one way or another, we "ask amiss," and need not expect to receive what we ask. This explains why many prayers remain unanswered.

430.080.020 Torrey: p452, T:VIII, P:2

**POINT 20: Prayer is unanswered because sin separates between the one who prays and the God to whom he prays.**

**Isaiah 59:1-2** [1] Surely the arm of the LORD is not too short to save, nor his ear too dull to hear. [2] But your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden his face from you, so that he will not hear.

If we ask God for anything and do not get it, we should not conclude necessarily that it is not God's will to give the thing we have asked. We should rather ask if there is any sin in our outward or inward lives that is separating us from God and closing His ear to our cry. So long as we hold on to sin or have any controversy with God, we cannot expect Him to heed our prayers.

430.080.030 Torrey: p453, T:VIII, P:3

**POINT 30: Prayer is unanswered when the one who prays takes idols into his heart.**

**Ezekiel 14:3** Son of man, these men have set up idols in their hearts and put wicked stumbling blocks before their faces. Should I let them inquire of me at all?

Many professedly Christian men and women have idols in their hearts as truly as the ancient Israelites. They do not recognize these things as idols, but they are. Anything upon which we have set our heart, and would not give up for Christ's sake, is an idol and hinders prayer. God often calls our attention to the fact that we have an idol by not answering our prayer, and thus leading us to ask why our prayer is not answered. Thus we discover the idol, put it away, and God hears our prayer.

430.080.040 Torrey: p453, T:VIII, P:4

**POINT 40: Prayer is unanswered because we do not forgive those against whom we have something.**

**Mark 11:25** And when you stand praying, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him, so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your sins.

**Mark 11:26 King James Version** But if ye do not forgive, neither will your father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

(Note: Mark 11:26 does not appear in many source manuscripts. Although it appears in the King James Version, it is not included in the New International Version, New English Bible, New American Bible, or the Revised Standard Version.)

This is one of the commonest hindrances to prayer. Far more common than we think. Prayer is answered on the basis that our sins are forgiven, but God cannot deal with us on the basis of forgiveness while we are harboring ill will against those who have wronged us. Anyone who is harboring a grudge against another has fast closed the ear of God against his own cry.

430.080.050     Torrey: p453, T:VIII, P:5

**POINT 50: Prayer is unanswered because of our unbelief -- i.e., because we question whether we shall receive that which God has promised.**

**James 1:5-8** [5] If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. [6] But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. [7] That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; [8] he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.

God demands that we shall believe His Word absolutely. To question it is to make Him a liar. Many do this when they plead his promises, and it is no wonder that their prayers are not answered.

430.080.060     Torrey: p454, T:VIII, P:6

**POINT 60: The prayers of husbands are hindered because they do not render to their wives that considerate regard which is their due.**

**1 Peter 3:5-7** [5] For this is the way the holy women of the past who put their hope in God used to make themselves beautiful. They were submissive to their own husbands, [6] like Sarah, who obeyed Abraham and called him her master. You are her daughters if you do what is right and do not give way to fear. [7] Husbands, in the same way be considerate as you live with your wives, and treat them with respect as the weaker partner and as heirs with you of the gracious gift of life, so that nothing will hinder your prayers.

It is doubtless also true that the prayers of wives are hindered because of their duty toward their husbands and vice versa. If husbands and wives should seek diligently for the cause of their unanswered prayers, they would often find it in their relations to one another and actions toward one another as husband and wife.

430.090.000     Torrey: p454, T:IX

**Topic 90: The Results of Prayer**

430.090.010     Torrey: p454, T:IX, P:1

**POINT 10: Prayer avails much in its working.**

**James 5:16** Therefore confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.

How much does prayer avail us in its working?

**James 1:17-18** [17] Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows. [18] He chose to give us birth through the word of truth, that we might be a kind of firstfruits of all he created.

**1 Kings 18:37-38** [37] Answer me, O LORD, answer me, so these people will know that you, O LORD, are God, and that you are turning their hearts back again." [38] Then the fire of the LORD fell

and burned up the sacrifice, the wood, the stones and the soil, and also licked up the water in the trench.

The great secret of the poverty and powerlessness of the average believer and average church is found in James 4:2:

**James 4:2** You want something but don't get it. You kill and covet, but you cannot have what you want. You quarrel and fight. You do not have, because you do not ask God.

430.090.020      Torrey: p454, T:IX, P:2

**POINT 20: Prayer secures the very thing asked.**

**John 14:13-14** [13] And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. [14] You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.

430.090.030      Torrey: p455, T:IX, P:3

**POINT 30: Whatsoever we ask from God we receive when we keep His commandments and do the things that are pleasing in his sight.**

**1 John 3:21-22** [21] Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God [22] and receive from him anything we ask, because we obey his commands and do what pleases him.

430.090.040      Torrey: p455, T:IX, P:4

**POINT 40: If we ask anything according to His will He hears us, and when our prayer is heard the thing asked is ours.**

**1 John 5:14-15** [14] This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us. [15] And if we know that he hears us -- whatever we ask -- we know that we have what we asked of him.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 440

---

440.000.000      Torrey: p456

### THANKSGIVING

The importance of this subject will be manifest to anyone who will not the space occupied in the Bible by thanksgiving and praise.

440.010.000      Torrey: p456, T:I

**Topic 10: The Duty**

440.010.010      Torrey: p456, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: It is a good thing to give thanks to the Lord.**

**Psalms 92:1-2, 4** [1] It is good to praise the LORD and make music to your name, O Most High, [2] to proclaim your love in the morning and your faithfulness at night, [4] For you make me glad by your deeds, O LORD; I sing for joy at the works of your hands.

The Lord's dealings with us make thanksgiving and praise on our part the only fitting thing. In the 107th Psalm the Psalmist burst out four times into the cry:

**Psalms 107:8, 15, 21, 31** Let them give thanks to the LORD for his unfailing love and his wonderful deeds for men.

As we reflect today upon the wondrous goodness of God to men on the one hand, and, on the other hand, upon the little thought and strength and time not only men, but even the average Christian, gives to thanksgiving, we may well utter the same cry.

440.010.020      Torrey: p456, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: We are commanded again and again to give thanks.**

**Psalms 100:4** Enter his gates with thanksgiving and his courts with praise; give thanks to him and praise his name.

**Ephesians 5:4** Nor should there be obscenity, foolish talk or coarse joking, which are out of place, but rather thanksgiving.

**Colossians 3:15, 17** [15] Let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, since as members of one



body you were called to peace. And be thankful. [17] And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

**1 Thessalonians 5:18** give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus.

The failure to return thanks to God "who daily loads us with benefits" is just as distinct and definite disobedience to God's commands as to steal or to murder.

440.010.030     Torrey: p457, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: The rendering of thanks to God is more acceptable to Him than costly sacrifices.**

**Psalms 69:30-31** [30] I will praise God's name in song and glorify him with thanksgiving. [31] This will please the LORD more than an ox, more than a bull with its horns and hoofs.

We cannot all bring expensive offerings to God, but we can all bring the more pleasing offering of true and hearty thanksgiving.

440.010.040     Torrey: p457, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: The early Christians gave themselves continually to praise and thanksgiving.**

**Luke 24:52-53** [52] Then they worshiped him and returned to Jerusalem with great joy. [53] And they stayed continually at the temple, praising God.

**Acts 2:46-47** [46] Every day they continued to meet together in the temple courts. They broke bread in their homes and ate together with glad and sincere hearts, [47] praising God and enjoying the favor of all the people. And the Lord added to their number daily those who were being saved.

Thanksgiving and praise were among the most noticeable and notable characteristics of their lives. The same thing is true of the holy men and women of the Old Testament. I can not think of a good person, mentioned prominently in the Bible, of whom it is not definitely recorded that he thanked God for some act of his goodness. The Bible is very largely taken up with praise and thanksgiving.

440.010.050     Torrey: p457, T:I, P:5

**POINT 50: The Lord Jesus Christ returned thanks.**

**John 11:41** So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "Father, I thank you that you have heard me."

**Matthew 11:25** At that time Jesus said, "I praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children.

These are only specimen passages, but again and again do we get glimpses into the life of Christ that show us that it was a life of abounding thankfulness to God. Christ's manner of returning thanks at the simplest meal was so noticeable that two of His disciples recognized Him by this after His resurrection.

**Luke 24:30-31, 35** [30] When he was at the table with them, he took bread, gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them. [31] Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him, and he disappeared from their sight. [35] Then the two told what had happened on the way, and how Jesus was recognized by them when he broke the bread.

440.010.060     Torrey: p458, T:I, P:6

**POINT 60: Giving thanks to the Father is one of the inevitable results of being "filled with the knowledge of His will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding."**

**Colossians 1:9, 11-12** [9] For this reason, since the day we heard about you, we have not stopped praying for you and asking God to fill you with the knowledge of his will through all spiritual wisdom and understanding. [11] ... and joyfully [12] giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light.

440.010.070 Torrey: p458, T:I, P:7

**POINT 70: Giving thanks is one of the inevitable results of being filled with the Spirit.**

**Ephesians 5:18-20** [18] Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit. [19] Speak to one another with psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, [20] always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

440.010.080 Torrey: p458, T:I, P:8

**POINT 80: The rendering of thanks brings glory to God.**

**2 Corinthians 9:12** This service that you perform is not only supplying the needs of God's people but is also overflowing in many expressions of thanks to God.

**2 Corinthians 4:15** All this is for your benefit, so that the grace that is reaching more and more people may cause thanksgiving to overflow to the glory of God.

440.010.090 Torrey: p458, T:I, P:9

**POINT 90: The rendering of thanks leads other men to believe.**

**John 11:41-42** [41] So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "Father, I thank you that you have heard me. [42] I knew that you always hear me, but I said this for the benefit of the people standing here, that they may believe that you sent me."

440.010.100 Torrey: p459, T:I, P:10

**POINT 100: The failure to return thanks for definite blessings received is a manifestation of ingratitude that surprises and grieves Jesus Christ.**

**Luke 17:15-18** [15] One of them, when he saw he was healed, came back, praising God in a loud voice. [16] He threw himself at Jesus' feet and thanked him -- and he was a Samaritan. [17] Jesus asked, "Were not all ten cleansed? Where are the other nine? [18] Was no one found to return and give praise to God except this foreigner?"

440.010.110 Torrey: p459, T:I, P:11

**POINT 110: The failure to return thanks is one of the principal reasons for the revelation of the wrath of God from heaven, and for giving men up to a reprobate mind.**

**Romans 1:18, 21** [18] The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, [21] For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened.

440.010.120 Torrey: p459, T:I, P:12

**POINT 120: Thanksgiving is a necessary accompaniment of prevailing prayer.**

**Philippians 4:6** Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.

440.020.000 Torrey: p459, T:II

**Topic 20: To Whom to Give Thanks.**

440.020.010 Torrey: p459, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: Thanks should be given to God.**

**Psalms 75:1** We give thanks to you, O God, we give thanks, for your Name is near; men tell of your wonderful deeds.

**1 Corinthians 15:57** But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

440.020.020 Torrey: p459, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Thanks should be given to God, even the Father.**

**Colossians 1:12** giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light.

**Ephesians 5:20** always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

440.020.030 Torrey: p460, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: Thanks should be given to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

**Ephesians 1:3** Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in the heavenly realms with every spiritual blessing in Christ.

440.020.040 Torrey: p460, T:II, P:4

**POINT 40: Thanks should be rendered to Jesus Christ our Lord.**

**1 Timothy 1:12** I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has given me strength, that he considered me faithful, appointing me to his service.

In the overwhelming majority of instances, however, in the New Testament, to say nothing of the Old, the offering of thanks is to God the Father. It is through Jesus Christ. The reason for this seems to be that God the Father is the original source of all our blessings. Even Jesus is His gift.

**John 3:16** For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.

**Romans 5:8** But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

While all the Father's love is manifested to us in Christ, still it is the Father's love. We need to recognize the Father back of Christ as the source of all. The conception of God as only brought to love us because of what Christ did, is utterly foreign to the thought and life of the New Testament. It is true

that God, being holy, can deal with sinners in mercy only on the ground of the propitiatory work of CHrist, but it is God Himself who furnishes the propitiation:

**1 John 4:10** This is love: not that we loved God, but that he loved us and sent his Son as an atoning sacrifice for our sins.

The Son came, as He so often said, to do the Father's will.

440.030.000      Torrey: p460, T:II

**Topic 30: Who Can Render Acceptable Thanks.**

440.030.010      Torrey: p460, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: The redeemed of the Lord can render acceptable thanks.**

**Psalms 107:1-2** [1] Give thanks to the LORD, for he is good; his love endures forever. [2] Let the redeemed of the LORD say this -- those he redeemed from the hand of the foe,

440.030.020      Torrey: p460, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: Those who believe and know the truth can render acceptable thanks.**

**1 Timothy 4:3** They forbid people to marry and order them to abstain from certain foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth.

The body of believers "a spiritual house, an holy priesthood" exists for this purpose, "to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ."

**1 Peter 2:5** you also, like living stones, are being built into a spiritual house to be a holy priesthood, offering spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.

Compare **Hebrews 13:15** Through Jesus, therefore, let us continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise -- the fruit of lips that confess his name.

440.030.030      Torrey: p461, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: The wicked cannot render to God acceptable thanksgiving. Their sacrifice is an abomination to the Lord.**

**Proverbs 15:8** The LORD detests the sacrifice of the wicked, but the prayer of the upright pleases him.

Compare **Hebrews 13:15** Through Jesus, therefore, let us continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise -- the fruit of lips that confess his name.

440.040.000      Torrey: p461, T:IV

**Topic 440: For What to Render Thanks.**

440.040.010      Torrey: p461, T:IV, P:1

**POINT 10: We should render thanks for Jesus Christ.**

**Luke 2:27-29** [27] Moved by the Spirit, he went into the temple courts. When the parents brought in the child Jesus to do for him what the custom of the Law required, [28] Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying: [29] "Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your

servant in peace.

**Luke 2:36-38** [36] There was also a prophetess, Anna, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher. She was very old; she had lived with her husband seven years after her marriage, [37] and then was a widow until she was eighty-four. She never left the temple but worshiped night and day, fasting and praying. [38] Coming up to them at that very moment, she gave thanks to God and spoke about the child to all who were looking forward to the redemption of Jerusalem.

As all our blessings center in Him and come through Him, our thanks to God will be for Him.

440.040.020     Torrey: p461, T:IV, P:2

**POINT 20: We should render thanks for forgiveness of iniquities.**

**Psalms 103:2-3** [2] Praise the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits -- [3] who forgives all your sins and heals all your diseases,

440.040.030     Torrey: p461, T:IV, P:3

**POINT 30: We should render thanks for deliverance from the power of the law of sin and death.**

**Romans 7:24-25** [24] What a wretched man I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? [25] Thanks be to God -- through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I myself in my mind am a slave to God's law, but in the sinful nature a slave to the law of sin.

440.040.040     Torrey: p461, T:IV, P:4

**POINT 40: We should render thanks for healing of our diseases.**

**Psalms 103:3** [2] Praise the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits -- [3] who forgives all your sins and heals all your diseases,

Compare **Luke 17:15-18** [15] One of them, when he saw he was healed, came back, praising God in a loud voice. [16] He threw himself at Jesus' feet and thanked him -- and he was a Samaritan. [17] Jesus asked, "Were not all ten cleansed? Where are the other nine? [18] Was no one found to return and give praise to God except this foreigner?"

440.040.050     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:5

**POINT 50: We should render thanks for victory through Lord Jesus Christ over sin and death and the grave.**

**1 Corinthians 15:57** But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

440.040.060     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:6

**POINT 60: We should render thanks for a new birth unto a living hope by the resurrection of Christ.**

**1 Peter 1:3** [3] Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, [4] and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil or fade -- kept in heaven for you, [5] who through faith are shielded by God's power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time.

440.040.070     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:7

**POINT 70: We should render thanks for being made qualified to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light.**

**Colossians 1:12** giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light.

440.040.080     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:8

**POINT 80: We should render thanks for comfort in all our tribulations.**

**2 Corinthians 1:3-4** [3] Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort, [4] who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God.

440.040.090     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:9

**POINT 90: We should render thanks for answered prayer.**

**John 11:41** So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "Father, I thank you that you have heard me.

Every answered prayer should be met by definite thanksgiving to God. We never forget to thank anyone but God for granted requests.

440.040.100     Torrey: p462, T:IV, P:10

**POINT 100: We should render thanks for wisdom and might.**

**Daniel 2:23** I thank and praise you, O God of my fathers: You have given me wisdom and power, you have made known to me what we asked of you, you have made known to us the dream of the king.

440.040.110     Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:11

**POINT 110: We should render thanks for enabling or empowerment for service.**

**1 Timothy 1:12** I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has given me strength, that he considered me faithful, appointing me to his service.

440.040.120     Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:12

**POINT 120: We should render thanks for food.**

**1 Timothy 4:3** They forbid people to marry and order them to abstain from certain foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and who know the truth.

It is remarkable how frequent are the references in the New Testament to thanksgiving for food. Over and over again attention is called, in the brief record of the life of Christ, to His returning thanks for food -- even when it consisted of five cheap barley loaves and two small fishes for a great company.

**John 6:23** Then some boats from Tiberias landed near the place where the people had eaten the bread after the Lord had given thanks.

440.040.130     Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:13

**POINT 130: We should render thanks for spiritual gifts.**

**1 Corinthians 14:18** I thank God that I speak in tongues more than all of you.

440.040.140 Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:14

**POINT 140: We should render thanks for Christian companions and fellowship.**

**Acts 28:15** The brothers there had heard that we were coming, and they traveled as far as the Forum of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. At the sight of these men Paul thanked God and was encouraged.

440.040.150 Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:15

**POINT 150: We should render thanks for the conversion of others.**

**Romans 6:17** But thanks be to God that, though you used to be slaves to sin, you wholeheartedly obeyed the form of teaching to which you were entrusted.

440.040.160 Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:16

**POINT 160: We should render thanks for the elect and their salvation.**

**2 Thessalonians 2:13** But we ought always to thank God for you, brothers loved by the Lord, because from the beginning God chose you to be saved through the sanctifying work of the Spirit and through belief in the truth.

440.040.170 Torrey: p463, T:IV, P:17

**POINT 170: We should render thanks for the grace bestowed upon others.**

**1 Corinthians 1:4** I always thank God for you because of his grace given you in Christ Jesus.

440.040.180 Torrey: p464, T:IV, P:18

**POINT 180: We should render thanks for the faith and love (and patience of hope) of others.**

**Romans 1:8** First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for all of you, because your faith is being reported all over the world.

**Ephesians 1:15-16** [15] For this reason, ever since I heard about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints, [16] I have not stopped giving thanks for you, remembering you in my prayers.

**Colossians 1:3-4** [3] We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you, [4] because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love you have for all the saints --

**1 Thessalonians 1:2-3** [2] We always thank God for all of you, mentioning you in our prayers. [3] We continually remember before our God and Father your work produced by faith, your labor prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ.

**2 Thessalonians 1:3** We ought always to thank God for you, brothers, and rightly so, because your faith is growing more and more, and the love every one of you has for each other is increasing.

**Philemon 1:4-5** [4] I always thank my God as I remember you in my prayers, [5] because I hear



about your faith in the Lord Jesus and your love for all the saints.

This seems to have been one of the most frequent occasions of thanksgiving with Paul. Whenever he heard of the faith and love of an individual or church, his heart seems to have gone out at once in thanksgiving to God.

440.040.190      Torrey: p464, T:IV, P:19

**POINT 190: We should render thanks for the steadfastness of the love of others.**

**1 Thessalonians 3:8-9** [8] For now we really live, since you are standing firm in the Lord. [9] How can we thank God enough for you in return for all the joy we have in the presence of our God because of you?

440.040.200      Torrey: p464, T:IV, P:20

**POINT 200: We should render thanks for the reception on the part of believers of God's Word as the word of God.**

**1 Thessalonians 2:13** And we also thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as the word of men, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is at work in you who believe.

440.040.210      Torrey: p465, T:IV, P:21

**POINT 210: We should render thanks for all men.**

**1 Timothy 2:1** [1] I urge, then, first of all, that requests, prayers, intercession and thanksgiving be made for everyone --

440.040.220      Torrey: p465, T:IV, P:22

**POINT 220: We should render thanks in everything and for all things.**

**Philippians 4:6** Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.

**1 Thessalonians 5:18** give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus.

**Ephesians 5:20** always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

How can we render thanks in everything and for all things?

**Romans 8:28** And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose.

There is no greater, nor more simple secret of a life of uninterrupted and ever-increasing joyfulness, than rendering thanks of all things. Our disappointments become "His appointments," our sorrows become joys, and our tears become rainbows.

440.050.000      Torrey: p465, T:V

**Topic 50: When to Give Thanks**

440.050.010      Torrey: p465, T:V, P:1

**POINT 10: We should give thanks in the morning and every night.**

**Psalms 92:1-2** [1] It is good to praise the LORD and make music to your name, O Most High,  
[2] to proclaim your love in the morning and your faithfulness at night,

Each day should be begun and closed with thanksgiving to God. The thought of God's goodness to us should rule our lives. With this thought we should arise every morning to work and lie down every night to sleep.

440.050.020      Torrey: p465, T:V, P:2

**POINT 20: We should give thanks at midnight.**

**Psalms 119:62** At midnight I rise to give you thanks for your righteous laws.

The judgments here spoken of are the judgments of God's word. Compare:

**Psalms 119:7** I will praise you with an upright heart as I learn your righteous laws.

**Psalms 119:13** With my lips I recount all the laws that come from your mouth.

**Psalms 119:30** I have chosen the way of truth; I have set my heart on your laws.

**Psalms 119:39** Take away the disgrace I dread, for your laws are good.

**Psalms 119:43** Do not snatch the word of truth from my mouth, for I have put my hope in your laws.

**Psalms 119:53** Indignation grips me because of the wicked, who have forsaken your law.

**Psalms 119:75** I know, O LORD, that your laws are righteous, and in faithfulness you have afflicted me.

**Psalms 119:102** I have not departed from your laws, for you yourself have taught me.

**Psalms 119:106** I have taken an oath and confirmed it, that I will follow your righteous laws.

**Psalms 119:108** Accept, O LORD, the willing praise of my mouth, and teach me your laws.

**Psalms 119:120** My flesh trembles in fear of you; I stand in awe of your laws.

**Psalms 119:137** Righteous are you, O LORD, and your laws are right.

**Psalms 119:149** Hear my voice in accordance with your love; preserve my life, O LORD, according to your laws.

**Psalms 119:156** Your compassion is great, O LORD; preserve my life according to your laws.

**Psalms 119:160** All your words are true; all your righteous laws are eternal.

**Psalms 119:164** Seven times a day I praise you for your righteous laws.

**Psalms 119:175** Let me live that I may praise you, and may your laws sustain me.

We should be so taken up with the excellence of God's Word that we awake in the night to thank Him for it.

440.050.030      Torrey: p466, T:V, P:3

**POINT 30: We should give thanks every time we eat.**

**1 Timothy 4:4-5** [4] For everything God created is good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, [5] because it is consecrated by the word of God and prayer.

**Romans 14:6** He who regards one day as special, does so to the Lord. He who eats meat, eats to the Lord, for he gives thanks to God; and he who abstains, does so to the Lord and gives thanks to God.

**Acts 27:35** After he said this, he took some bread and gave thanks to God in front of them all. Then he broke it and began to eat.

440.050.040      Torrey: p466, T:V, P:4

**POINT 40: We should give thanks every time we pray.**

**Philippians 4:6** Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God.

**Colossians 4:2** Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful.

Thanksgiving for prayers answered and blessings granted in the past, can alone prepare for new answers and new blessings. Furthermore, definite thanks for blessings already received will strengthen our faith to appropriate larger blessings.

440.050.050      Torrey: p466, T:V, P:5

**POINT 50: We should give thanks in all our doing in word and in deed.**

**Colossians 3:17** And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

As all the doing of a Christian is in Christ's name and in Christ's strength, it should all be done with thanksgiving to Him who gives us the name and strength in which to do it. This applies to all our activities, and not to those alone which we ordinarily call Christian work. All work of one abiding in Christ is Christian work, the work of the man digging a ditch or of the woman at the washtub, and it should all be done in Christ's name and with thanksgiving to God. There is no drudgery in a life thus lived. The whole of life becomes a song, a psalm of praise.

440.050.060      Torrey: p466, T:V, P:6

**POINT 60: We should return thanks in everything.**

**1 Thessalonians 5:18** give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus.

440.050.070      Torrey: p467, T:V, P:7

**POINT 70: We should give thanks always.**

**Ephesians 5:20** always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

As we are to pray without ceasing, so are we to return thanks always. There cannot, of course, always be the word of thanks on our lips, but there can always be the heart going up toward God in gratitude and praise. Thanksgiving and prayer should be the atmosphere in which we live, the air we breathe, and just as a man keeps right on breathing while doing a thousand other things without ever stopping to think how he does it, so we can keep on praising and thanking, and praying while doing a thousand other things without ever stopping to think how we do it. For example, a man can be preaching in the power of the Holy Spirit, and throwing all the energy of his soul and body into his preaching, and all the time be thanking God for the power in which he is preaching. This does not hinder but increases the inflow of the power. There must, of course, be times in which we give ourselves up exclusively to prayer and thanksgiving, by which this perpetual atmosphere of prayer and thanksgiving are maintained. There should be spontaneous exclamations of thanks as well as spontaneous exclamations of prayer. But we should bless God at all times: His praise should be continually in our mouths.

**Psalms 32:1** Blessed is he whose transgressions are forgiven, whose sins are covered.

440.050.080      Torrey: p467, T:V, P:8

**POINT 80: We should give thanks forever.**

**Psalms 89:1** I will sing of the LORD's great love forever; with my mouth I will make your faithfulness known through all generations.

Thanksgiving and praise will be a large part of the occupation of Heaven.

**Revelation 5:8-14** [8] And when he had taken it, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. [9] And they sang a new song: "You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased men for God from every tribe and language and people and nation. [10] You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth." [11] Then I looked and heard the voice of many angels, numbering thousands upon thousands, and ten thousand times ten thousand. They encircled the throne and the living creatures and the elders. [12] In a loud voice they sang: "Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!" [13] Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing: "To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, for ever and ever!" [14] The four living creatures said, "Amen," and the elders fell down and worshiped.

**Revelation 7:15 11-17** [11] All the angels were standing around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures. They fell down on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, [12] saying: "Amen! Praise and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God for ever and ever. Amen!" [13] Then one of the elders asked me, "These in white robes -- who are they, and where did they come from?" [14] I answered, "Sir, you know." And he said, "These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. [15] Therefore, "they are before the throne of God and serve him day and night in his temple; and he who sits on the throne will spread his tent over them. [16] Never again will they hunger; never again will they thirst. The sun will not beat upon them, nor any

scorching heat. [17] For the Lamb at the center of the throne will be their shepherd; he will lead them to springs of living water. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes."

Heavenly life will be a perpetual jubilee. We can have an unceasing year of jubilee down here in which to prepare for the year of jubilee that never ends.

440.060.000      Torrey: p468, T:VI

**Topic 60: How to Return Thanks**

440.060.010      Torrey: p468, T:VI, P:1

**POINT 10: We should render our thanks to God in the name of Christ, or through Christ.**

**Ephesians 5:20** always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Romans 1:8** First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for all of you, because your faith is being reported all over the world.

**Colossians 3:17** And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him.

Christ is man's only way of approach to God.

**John 14:6** Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me."

As there was no way of approach to God in the Old Testament except on the ground of the shed blood, so there is no way of approach to the real holy of holies except by the way of the rent vail of Christ's flesh and his outpoured blood.

**Hebrews 10:19-20** [19] Therefore, brothers, since we have confidence to enter the Most Holy Place by the blood of Jesus, [20] by a new and living way opened for us through the curtain, that is, his body, [21] and since we have a great priest over the house of God, [22] let us draw near to God with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water.

Christ has access to God, and we only in His name and through Him. God receives no offering of thanks from men except that offered in Christ's name. The man who has been the vilest sinner can offer up thanks to God in Jesus' name that are the sweetest incense to Him the man whose life has been most exemplary can offer not acceptable thanks except in the same name and way. This shows the utter impossibility of a union thanksgiving service between an intelligent believer in Christ and a Jew or a Unitarian. There is no common way of approach to God.

440.060.020      Torrey: p469, T:VI, P:2

**POINT 20: We should render our thanks to God in the Spirit's power.**

**Ephesians 5:18-20** [18] Do not get drunk on wine, which leads to debauchery. Instead, be filled with the Spirit. [19] Speak to one another with psalms, hymns and spiritual songs. Sing and make music in your heart to the Lord, [20] always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The Holy Spirit alone can lead to acceptable thanks. It is the thanks that God the Spirit inspires, that

are offered through God the Son; that God the Father accepts. No strange fire must be brought before God. We should cast ourselves upon the Holy Spirit to teach us to return thanks aright.

440.060.030      Torrey: p469, T:VI, P:3

**POINT 30: We should give thanks definitely.**

**1 Kings 8:15, 20, 22- 24** [15] Then he said: "Praise be to the LORD, the God of Israel, who with his own hand has fulfilled what he promised with his own mouth to my father David. ... [20] "The LORD has kept the promise he made: I have succeeded David my father and now I sit on the throne of Israel, just as the LORD promised, and I have built the temple for the Name of the LORD, the God of Israel. [22] Then Solomon stood before the altar of the LORD in front of the whole assembly of Israel, spread out his hands toward heaven [23] and said: "O LORD, God of Israel, there is no God like you in heaven above or on earth below -- you who keep your covenant of love with your servants who continue wholeheartedly in your way. [24] You have kept your promise to your servant David my father; with your mouth you have promised and with your hand you have fulfilled it -- as it is today.

**John 11:41** So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "Father, I thank you that you have heard me."

Definite acknowledgment of definite blessings received. (The above are only illustrative instances. Such instances abound in the Bible.)

440.060.040      Torrey: p470, T:VI, P:4

**POINT 40: We should render thanks profusely. No mean, stingy, grudging rendering of thanks.**

**Colossians 2:6-7** [6] So then, just as you received Christ Jesus as Lord, continue to live in him, [7] rooted and built up in him, strengthened in the faith as you were taught, and overflowing with thankfulness.

440.060.050      Torrey: p470, T:VI, P:5

**POINT 50: We should render thanks without ceasing.**

**1 Thessalonians 2:13** And we also thank God continually because, when you received the word of God, which you heard from us, you accepted it not as the word of men, but as it actually is, the word of God, which is at work in you who believe.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 450

---

450.000.000      Torrey: p471

### WORSHIP

450.010.000      Torrey: p471, T:I  
Topic 10: What is Worship?

450.010.010      Torrey: p472, T:I, P:Proposition

**POINT 10: Worship is the soul bowing itself in adoring contemplation before the object worshiped. To worship God is to bow before God in adoring contemplation of Himself.**

**Exodus 4:31** and they believed. And when they heard that the LORD was concerned about them and had seen their misery, they bowed down and worshiped.

**Exodus 24:1-2** [1] Then he said to Moses, "Come up to the LORD, you and Aaron, Nadab and Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel. You are to worship at a distance, [2] but Moses alone is to approach the LORD; the others must not come near. And the people may not come up with him."

**Exodus 33:10** Whenever the people saw the pillar of cloud standing at the entrance to the tent, they all stood and worshiped, each at the entrance to his tent.

**Exodus 34:5-8** [5] Then the LORD came down in the cloud and stood there with him and proclaimed his name, the LORD. [6] And he passed in front of Moses, proclaiming, "The LORD, the LORD, the compassionate and gracious God, slow to anger, abounding in love and faithfulness, [7] maintaining love to thousands, and forgiving wickedness, rebellion and sin. Yet he does not leave the guilty unpunished; he punishes the children and their children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation." [8] Moses bowed to the ground at once and worshiped.

**Joshua 5:13-14** [13] Now when Joshua was near Jericho, he looked up and saw a man standing in front of him with a drawn sword in his hand. Joshua went up to him and asked, "Are you for us or for our enemies?" [14] "Neither," he replied, "but as commander of the army of the LORD I have now come." Then Joshua fell facedown to the ground in reverence, and asked him, "What message does my Lord have for his servant?"

**2 Chronicles 7:3** When all the Israelites saw the fire coming down and the glory of the LORD above the temple, they knelt on the pavement with their faces to the ground, and they worshiped and gave thanks to the LORD, saying, "He is good; his love endures forever."



**2 Chronicles 20:18** Jehoshaphat bowed with his face to the ground, and all the people of Judah and Jerusalem fell down in worship before the LORD.

**2 Chronicles 29:29** When the offerings were finished, the king and everyone present with him knelt down and worshiped.

**Nehemiah 8:6** Ezra praised the LORD, the great God; and all the people lifted their hands and responded, "Amen! Amen!" Then they bowed down and worshiped the LORD with their faces to the ground.

The word worship is commonly used in a very loose and unscriptural manner -- e.g., we speak of the whole service of Lords Day morning and evening as "public worship," but there is a great deal in it that is not worship. Reading the Bible and meditating upon it is not worship. It may lead to worship but it is not worship. Listening to a sermon is not worship. Praying is not worship. It may be, and should be, accompanied by worship; but it is not worship. Singing is not necessarily nor generally worship. There are hymns which, if sung intelligently and in the proper spirit, would be worship, but they are comparatively few in the hymnology of the day. Worship is a definite act of a character very clearly defined in the Bible. It is, as said, the soul bowing before God in adoring contemplation of Himself. The root of the Hebrew word translated "worship" in the Old Testament means "to bow down." It has been well said "in prayer we are occupied with our needs, in thanksgiving we are occupied with our blessings, in worship we are occupied with Himself."

450.020.000      Torrey: p472, T:II

**Topic 20: Whom to Worship**

450.020.010      Torrey: p472, T:II, P:1

**POINT 10: We should worship the Lord our God and Him alone.**

**Matthew 4:10** Jesus said to him, "Away from me, Satan! For it is written: `Worship the Lord your God, and serve him only.'"

We may admire men, we must worship God alone. No holy man, saint, nor angel should be worshiped.

**Acts 10:25-26** [25] As Peter entered the house, Cornelius met him and fell at his feet in reverence. [26] But Peter made him get up. "Stand up," he said, "I am only a man myself."

**Revelation 22:8-9** [8] I, John, am the one who heard and saw these things. And when I had heard and seen them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing them to me. [9] But he said to me, "Do not do it! I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers the prophets and of all who keep the words of this book. Worship God!"

450.020.020      Torrey: p473, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: We should worship the Lord our God and Him alone.**

**John 4:23** Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks.

450.020.030      Torrey: p473, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: We should worship the Lord our God and Him alone.**

**Hebrews 1:6** And again, when God brings his firstborn into the world, he says, "Let all God's angels worship him."

**Philippians 2:10-11** [10] that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, [11] and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

**Revelation 5:8-13** [8] And when he had taken it, the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb. Each one had a harp and they were holding golden bowls full of incense, which are the prayers of the saints. [9] And they sang a new song: "You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased men for God from every tribe and language and people and nation. [10] You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth." [11] Then I looked and heard the voice of many angels, numbering thousands upon thousands, and ten thousand times ten thousand. They encircled the throne and the living creatures and the elders. [12] In a loud voice they sang: "Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!" [13] Then I heard every creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth and on the sea, and all that is in them, singing: "To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, for ever and ever!"

QUESTION: How can we reconcile this with Point 10?

ANSWER: **John 20:28** Thomas said to him, "My Lord and my God!" Jesus Christ is the Lord our God.

450.030.000      Torrey: p473, T:III

**Topic 30: The Duty to Worship**

450.030.010      Torrey: p474, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: Worship of God and of Christ is commanded.**

**Matthew 4:10** Jesus said to him, "Away from me, Satan! For it is written: `Worship the Lord your God, and serve him only.'"

**Hebrews 1:6** And again, when God brings his firstborn into the world, he says, "Let all God's angels worship him."

We owe worship to God. It is His due. We owe love to man, obedience to parents, worship to God. It is our first duty toward Him. He is the All holy, All wise, Almighty, the Infinite, All Perfect One, and our rightful attitude toward Him is that of bowing before Him, or prostrating ourselves before Him, in adoring contemplation of His infinite liveliness and glory, of His attributes, of Himself. If we do not worship God we are robbing Him of what is His due. It is not enough that we obey Him, that we pray to Him, that we return thanks to Him, that we seek to serve Him and do His will. We must worship. Have you ever *worshiped* God? How much time do you spend daily in worshipping Him -- in pure and simple worship, in bowing before Him in silent and adoring contemplation of Him?

450.030.020      Torrey: p474, T:III, P:1

**POINT 20: God is seeking true worshipers.**

**John 4:23** Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the

Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks.

The one thing above all else that God desires of men is worship. God desires obedience of men, He desires service, He desires prayer, He desires praise and thanksgiving, but His supreme desire from man is worship. He is *seeking* "worshippers."

450.040.000     Torrey: p475, T:IV

**Topic 40: Where to Worship**

450.040.010     Torrey: p475, T:IV, P:Proposition

**POINT 10: The place is not important.**

**John 4:19-23** [19] "Sir," the woman said, "I can see that you are a prophet. [20] Our fathers worshiped on this mountain, but you Jews claim that the place where we must worship is in Jerusalem." [21] Jesus declared, "Believe me, woman, a time is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. [22] You Samaritans worship what you do not know; we worship what we do know, for salvation is from the Jews. [23] Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks.

450.050.000     Torrey: p475, T:V

**Topic 50: How to Worship**

450.050.010     Torrey: p475, T:V, P:10

**POINT 10: We should worship on the ground of the shed blood of Jesus.**

**Hebrews 9:7, 14** [7] But only the high priest entered the inner room, and that only once a year, and never without blood, which he offered for himself and for the sins the people had committed in ignorance. [14] How much more, then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself unblemished to God, cleanse our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living God!

**Hebrews 10:19** [19] Therefore, brothers, since we have confidence to enter the Most Holy Place by the blood of Jesus, [20] by a new and living way opened for us through the curtain, that is, his body, [21] and since we have a great priest over the house of God, [22] let us draw near to God with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from a guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water.

There is no approach to God except on the ground of shed blood.

450.050.020     Torrey: p475, T:V, P:20

**POINT 20: We should worship by the Spirit of God.**

**Philippians 3:3** [3] For it is we who are the circumcision, we who worship by the Spirit of God, who glory in Christ Jesus, and who put no confidence in the flesh

Compare: **John 4:24** God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.

The only true worship, worship which is acceptable to God, is the worship which the Spirit inspires. Not all worship of God is "in the Spirit." Very much is of man himself, in the power of his own will. It is of the flesh. The flesh seeks to intrude into every sphere of life, even the highest and most sacred.

The flesh has its worship. Men seek to do the things that please God, and win credit for themselves, of their own motion and in their own strength. But this worship is not acceptable. Men may be very earnest in this worship, very sincere in it, but it is not acceptable. It is not what God is seeking. God is seeking worshipers who worship in the Spirit, and who have no "confidence in the flesh." To worship aright we must recognize the utter inability of the flesh -- i.e., ourselves untaught, unprompted and ungoverned by God's Spirit -- to worship acceptably. We must realize the danger there is of the flesh intruding itself into our worship. In utter self-abnegation we must cast ourselves upon the Holy Spirit to lead us in our worship. The first thing we should do when we would worship, is, with a realization of our own utter helplessness, to look up to the Holy Spirit to teach us and enable us to worship aright. He must present God to our mind for our contemplation. He must subdue and awe our hearts before Him in true adoration. The only living that is acceptable to God is living in the Spirit, the only walk that is acceptable to God is walk in the Spirit, the only service that is acceptable to God is service in the Spirit, the only prayer that is acceptable to God is prayer in the Spirit, the only thanks that are acceptable to God are thanks in the Spirit, and the only worship that is acceptable to God is worship in the Spirit. Would we worship aright our hearts must look up and cry "Teach me, Holy Spirit, to worship"; and He will do it.

450.050.030     Torrey: p476, T:V, P:30

**POINT 30: We should worship "in truth."**

**John 4:24** God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.

QUESTION: What does it mean to "worship in truth"?

ANSWER:

**1 John 3:18** Dear children, let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth.

**Philippians 1:18** [18] But what does it matter? The important thing is that in every way, whether from false motives or true, Christ is preached. And because of this I rejoice. Yes, and I will continue to rejoice,

Not in mere form or profession or pretense, but in reality. There is much worship that is not real. The head bows, the body is prostrated, but the soul does not bow in true adoration before God. The Spirit alone leads to worship in truth.

450.060.000     Torrey: p477, T:VI

**Topic 60: The Results of True Worship**

450.060.010     Torrey: p477, T:VI, P:10

**POINT 10: When there is true worship the Father is satisfied. He has found what He seeks.**

**John 4:23** Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the Father seeks.

450.060.020     Torrey: p477, T:VI, P:20

**POINT 20: The worshiper is satisfied. His highest joy is found.**

**Psalms 27:4** One thing I ask of the LORD, this is what I seek: that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to gaze upon the beauty of the LORD and to seek him in his temple.

There is no higher, no deeper, no purer joy than that which springs from the adoring contemplation

of God. I have walked miles, and climbed through underbrush and briars and over crags and precipices, just to get some beautiful view, and as I have looked out upon it, and feasted upon the never-to-be-forgotten vision of mountain and valley, forest and river, village and hamlet, cloud and sunshine, I have felt well repaid for the trial and suffering and weariness. I have sat by the hour before a great painting in joyous beholding of its beauty. Earth has few purer joys than these, but they are nothing to the profound and holy joy that fills the soul as we bow before God in worship, asking nothing, seeking nothing from Him, occupied with and satisfied with Himself. Was the Psalmist thinking only of the future, or of what he had enjoyed in the present, when he wrote: "In thy presence is fulness of joy"? (Psalm 16:11.) One of the highest privileges of heaven will be that we shall see His face.

450.060.030      Torrey: p478, T:VI, P:30

**POINT 30: The worshiper is transformed into God's likeness with ever-increasing glory.**

**2 Corinthians 3:18** And we, who with unveiled faces all reflect the Lord's glory, are being transformed into his likeness with ever-increasing glory, which comes from the Lord, who is the Spirit.

Beholding God and worshiping God we become like God.

**Exodus 34:29** When Moses came down from Mount Sinai with the two tablets of the Testimony in his hands, he was not aware that his face was radiant because he had spoken with the LORD.

Our complete transformation into His likeness will come through the complete and undimmed vision of Himself.

**1 John 3:2** Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

450.060.040      Torrey: p478, T:VI, P:40

**POINT 40: Worship empties us of pride, and reveals our weakness and vileness.**

**Isaiah 6:5** "Woe to me!" I cried. "I am ruined! For I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips, and my eyes have seen the King, the LORD Almighty."

**Job 42:5-6** [5] My ears had heard of you but now my eyes have seen you. [6] Therefore I despise myself and repent in dust and ashes.

**Isaiah 40:31** but those who hope in the LORD will renew their strength. They will soar on wings like eagles; they will run and not grow weary, they will walk and not be faint.

It is true that power comes in answer to definite prayer, but not only in answer to prayer. Power belongs to God, and the coming into contact and remaining in contact with God in worship fills our souls with power. Spiritual power has many points of similarity to electric force, and just as a receptive body can be charged with electricity by being insulated and brought into contact with some source of electric energy, so we can be charged with the energy of God by the insulation from the world and contact with Himself that is found in worship. As we worship God His power flows into us. Nights spent in contact with God, on our faces before Him in worship, are followed by days of power in contact with men. One great secret of the lack of power in service today is the absence of worship in our relations to God Himself.

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## **Chapter 460**

---

460.000.000      Torrey: p479

### **THE BELIEVER'S ASSURANCE OF SALVATION**

460.010.000      Torrey: p479, T:I

**Topic 10:** The Believer's Privilege of Having Assurance, or Knowing that He Has Eternal Life.

460.010.010      Torrey: p479, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10:** John wrote his first Epistle to those who believe in the name of the Son of God, for the express purpose that they may know that they have eternal life. Anyone who believes in the name of the Son of God may know that he has eternal life.

**1 John 5:13** I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.

To deny the possibility of the believer's knowing that he has eternal life, is to say that the first Epistle of John was written in vain, and is to insult the Holy Spirit, who is its real author.

460.010.020      Torrey: p479, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20:** The believer may know that he is justified from all things; for the Word of God says so.

**Acts 13:39** Through him everyone who believes is justified from everything you could not be justified from by the law of Moses.

460.010.030      Torrey: p479, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30:** The believer may know that he is a child of God; for the Word of God says that he is.

**John 1:12** Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God

460.020.000      Torrey: p479, T:II

**Topic 20:** How We may Know that We have Eternal Life.



**POINT 10: We may know that we have eternal life through what is written -- through the testimony of God Himself in the Bible, especially in the first Epistle of John.**

**1 John 5:13** I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.

The testimony of Scripture is the testimony of God. This is widely questioned today, even by professing Christians. It is nonetheless true. Many of us know it to be true; all may know it to be true. What do the Scriptures say about the believer's having salvation and eternal life?

**John 3:36** Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him."

**John 5:24** I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life.

**John 6:47** I tell you the truth, he who believes has everlasting life.

**Acts 10:43** All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name.

**Acts 13:38-39** [38] "Therefore, my brothers, I want you to know that through Jesus the forgiveness of sins is proclaimed to you. [39] Through him everyone who believes is justified from everything you could not be justified from by the law of Moses.

**John 1:12** Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God

Now we know whether we believe or not, whether we have that real faith in Christ that leads us to receive Him. If we have this faith in Christ we have God's own written testimony that we have eternal life, that our sins are forgiven, that we are children of God. The word "know" (a translation of two different Greek words) is found twenty-seven times in the first Epistle of John.

**1 John 5:10-12** [10] Anyone who believes in the Son of God has this testimony in his heart. Anyone who does not believe God has made him out to be a liar, because he has not believed the testimony God has given about his Son. [11] And this is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. [12] He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life.

Anyone who does not believe God's testimony that He has given us eternal life, and that this life is in His Son, and that he who has the Son has the life, makes God a liar. It is sometimes said, "It is presumption for anyone to say he knows he is saved, or to say he knows he has eternal life." Is it presumption to believe God? Is it not rather presumption not to believe God, to "make God a liar?" When Jesus said to the one who was a sinner "Your sins are forgiven" (Luke 7:48), was it presumption for her to go out and say "I know my sins are forgiven?" Is it any more presumption for a believer today to say "My sins are forgiven, I have eternal life," when God says in His permanent, written testimony to "everyone who believes" "you are justified from all things" (Acts 13:39), "you have eternal life"? (John 3:36; 1 John 5:13) It is the blood of Christ that makes us safe, it is the word of God that makes us sure. (Exodus 12:13)



460.020.020      Torrey: p481, T:II, P:2

**POINT 20: We know that we have passed out of death into life from the testimony of the life itself.**

**1 John 3:14** We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death.

A man who is physically alive knows it from the consciousness of the life itself that is coursing through his veins. Men may try to convince him that he is dead but he knows he is alive. Just so spiritually. The life of love is the life of God, is eternal life. (1 John 4:7, 16) Selfishness is death. Therefore, he who really loves his brethren, knows that he has passed "out of death into life." He knows it by the testimony of the life itself.

NOTE: It is important to notice, however, what God's tests of love are. They are given in the immediately following verses:

**1 John 4:16-18** [16] And so we know and rely on the love God has for us. God is love. Whoever lives in love lives in God, and God in him. [17] In this way, love is made complete among us so that we will have confidence on the day of judgment, because in this world we are like him. [18] There is no fear in love. But perfect love drives out fear, because fear has to do with punishment. The one who fears is not made perfect in love.

Laying down our life for those we love is the supreme test. This may be done by actually dying in their stead when there is a call for that, as there often is. It may also be done by putting our life at their disposal and using it for them. There is always call for this. The everyday test of love is, giving what you have of this world's good to meet the known need of others. The one who knows a brother who has need while he himself has that which will meet this need, and does not give it; such a one cannot say he has love for the brethren, and cannot know that he has passed out of death into life by the evidence of the life itself. How much more practical and searching are the Bible tests of love of the brethren than those we hear so much in modern prayer meetings -- e.g., "I love the brethren, I love to meet with them and hear their testimony. No place is so precious to me as the gathering together of God's people." Are you laying down your life for the brethren? Are you giving what you have to meet the need of others?

460.020.030      Torrey: p482, T:II, P:3

**POINT 30: We know that we are the children of God because the Spirit Himself bears witnesses together with our spirit that we are.**

**Romans 8:16** The Spirit himself testifies with our spirit that we are God's children.

QUESTION: What is the testimony of the Spirit?

ANSWER:

**Galatians 4:6** Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, "Abba, Father."

When we have accepted Christ and come out from under the bondage of the law into sonship, and thus become sons, God sends the Spirit of His Son into our hearts as a personal presence, and this Spirit of the Son in our hearts cries "Abba, Father." He thus bears witness along with our spirit to our sonship. This comes after faith, resting upon the bare word of God. Many are looking for the testimony

of the Spirit before they will accept the testimony of God's written word. This is the inversion of God's order.

See also **Ephesians 1:13-14** [13] And you also were included in Christ when you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation. Having believed, you were marked in him with a seal, the promised Holy Spirit, [14] who is a deposit guaranteeing our inheritance until the redemption of those who are God's possession -- to the praise of his glory.

We have, then, a threefold ground of assurance: the testimony of God in the written Word, the testimony of the life itself, the testimony of the Spirit. The testimony of the Word alone is sufficient, and we must accept the testimony of the bare Word to start with. Then we get also the testimony of the life and, to crown all, the testimony of the Spirit. With this threefold ground of assurance, is it presumption to say "I know I am a child of God, I know I have eternal life?"

460.030.000     Torrey: p482, T:III

**Topic 30: How to Obtain Assurance.**

460.030.010     Torrey: p482, T:III, P:1

**POINT 10: In order to have well-grounded assurance of eternal life we must "believe in the name of the Son of God."**

**1 John 5:13** I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life.

There are doubtless many who say they know they have eternal life who do not really believe in the name of the Son of God. This is not true assurance. It has no sure foundation in the word of Him who cannot lie. If we wish to get assurance of salvation we must first get saved. The reason why many do not have assurance that they are saved is because they are not saved. They shouldn't have assurance. What they need first is salvation. Many workers in dealing with others make the great mistake of trying to press them to the point of saying they know they are saved before it is clear that they are saved.

(b) We obtain assurance of eternal life through what is "written," therefore in order to obtain assurance we should study the Word. The assurance that rests upon our states of feeling will come and go as those states vary. But the assurance that rests upon the unchanging Word of God will be intelligent and steadfast. Ignorance of the Word of God is one of the greatest sources of the lack of assurance.

460.030.030     Torrey: p483, T:III, P:2

**POINT 20: We obtain assurance by believing God's testimony.**

**1 John 5:10-12** [10] Anyone who believes in the Son of God has this testimony in his heart. Anyone who does not believe God has made him out to be a liar, because he has not believed the testimony God has given about his Son. [11] And this is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. [12] He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life.

Merely studying the word will not bring assurance. We must believe it as well as studying it.

460.030.030     Torrey: p483, T:III, P:3

**POINT 30: In order to have assurance we should live out a life of love; love not merely in word and in tongue, but in deed and in truth.**

**1 John 3:14-20** [14] We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love our brothers. Anyone who does not love remains in death. [15] Anyone who hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life in him. [16] This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. And we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers. [17] If anyone has material possessions and sees his brother in need but has no pity on him, how can the love of God be in him? [18] Dear children, let us not love with words or tongue but with actions and in truth. [19] This then is how we know that we belong to the truth, and how we set our hearts at rest in his presence [20] whenever our hearts condemn us. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything.

460.030.040      Torrey: p484, T:III, P:4

**POINT 40: In order to obtain the witness of the Spirit together with that of our spirit we should give ourselves up to be led by the Spirit.**

Verse 16 in Romans 8 is clearly dependent upon verse 14, and it is only those who know verse 14 as a personal experience who can expect to know verse 16 as a personal experience. It is also clearly implied by the connection with verse 17, that it is in suffering together with Christ that we especially enjoy the assurance of sonship by the Spirit's testimony and the assurance that we shall be glorified together with Him.

---

# *What the Bible Teaches*

## Chapter 470

---

470.000.000      Torrey: p485

### THE DESTINY OF BELIEVERS

470.010.000      Torrey: p485, T:I

Topic 10:

470.010.010      Torrey: p485, T:I, P:1

**POINT 10: He who does the will of God lives forever. The world and all it contains passes, but he continues.**

**1 John 2:17** The world and its desires pass away, but the man who does the will of God lives forever.

470.010.020      Torrey: p485, T:I, P:2

**POINT 20: He who believes in Jesus Christ shall never die. He who keeps the word of Jesus Christ shall never see death.**

**John 11:25-26** [25] Jesus said to her, "I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; [26] and whoever lives and believes in me will never die. Do you believe this?"

**John 8:51** I tell you the truth, if anyone keeps my word, he will never see death.

Believers in Christ fall asleep, they never die.

**Acts 7:60** Then he fell on his knees and cried out, "Lord, do not hold this sin against them." When he had said this, he fell asleep.

470.010.030      Torrey: p485, T:I, P:3

**POINT 30: Until the coming of Christ believers in Christ who have departed from this life sleep.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:13- 15** [13] Brothers, we do not want you to be ignorant about those who fall asleep, or to grieve like the rest of men, who have no hope. [14] We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in him. [15] According to the Lord's own word, we tell you that we who are still alive, who are left till the coming

of the Lord, will certainly not precede those who have fallen asleep.

QUESTION: What is meant by sleep? Does it refer to a state of unconsciousness? Is this state called sleep to distinguish it from being awake, or is it called sleep to distinguish it from death?

The full answer to this question will be found under the next point. But note this, that sleep is not necessarily a state of unconsciousness, but oftentimes of highest consciousness and mental activity. Usually, however, sleep is a condition in which one is largely shut out of interaction with the outside world and shut up to himself and God and His angels, or the Devil and his angels.

470.010.040     Torrey: p486, T:I, P:4

**POINT 40: When the believer gets out of the flesh (the body) he departs to be with Christ; when he is absent from the body he is at home with the Lord.**

**Philippians 1:23-24** [23] I am torn between the two: I desire to depart and be with Christ, which is better by far; [24] but it is more necessary for you that I remain in the body.

**2 Corinthians 5:6, 8** [6] Therefore we are always confident and know that as long as we are at home in the body we are away from the Lord. [8] We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord.

QUESTION: What is the precise and definite character of our existence when "absent from the body" and "at home with the Lord," up to the time of the coming of the Lord and our being "clothed with our heavenly dwelling?"

**2 Corinthians 5:8, 2, 4: \*\*\* FIX THIS \*\*\* 2 Corinthians 5:2** [2] Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, [3] because when we are clothed, we will not be found naked. [4] For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed but to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. [5] Now it is God who has made us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

ANSWER: The Bible seems to give but little explicit and detailed information on this point. It does say, however, that this state "is very far better" than our present state. This leaves no room for the Roman Catholic teaching of tortures in "purgatory", nor for a state of unconsciousness. It is evidently a state of conscious bliss. It evidently is not the highest state to which the believer shall attain.

**2 Corinthians 5:1-4, 8:** [1] Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands. [2] Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, [3] because when we are clothed, we will not be found naked. [4] For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed but to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life. [8] We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord.

470.010.050     Torrey: p487, T:I, P:5

**POINT 50: At the coming of Jesus Christ the bodies of those who sleep in Christ shall be raised from the dead. Not, however, precisely the same bodies, even as the grain that grows is not precisely the same as the grain that was sown.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:16** For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud

command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first.

**1 Corinthians 15:12-13, 20- 23** [12] But if it is preached that Christ has been raised from the dead, how can some of you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? [13] If there is no resurrection of the dead, then not even Christ has been raised. [20] But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruits of those who have fallen asleep. [21] For since death came through a man, the resurrection of the dead comes also through a man. [22] For as in Adam all die, so in Christ all will be made alive. [23] But each in his own turn: Christ, the firstfruits; then, when he comes, those who belong to him.

**1 Corinthians 15:35-38** [35] But someone may ask, "How are the dead raised? With what kind of body will they come?" [36] How foolish! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. [37] When you sow, you do not plant the body that will be, but just a seed, perhaps of wheat or of something else. [38] But God gives it a body as he has determined, and to each kind of seed he gives its own body.

The grain that was sown disintegrates and many of its constituent elements go, no one can say to where. But the formative principle takes to itself many new elements, no one can fully say from where. So it is in the resurrection.

QUESTION: What about those who have been cremated, etc.?

ANSWER: Our resurrection bodies will not simply be "repaired" human bodies. Each of us, *both believers and non-believers*, will be *transformed*. We will receive a *new* body with some characteristics different from a human body. This is how it will be possible for those who are condemned to suffer eternally *in fire*.

John the Revealer states that during the Millennium Satan will be chained up for a thousand years. Yet Zechariah makes it clear that even during this "devil-free" period children will be born who will sin. If our resurrection bodies were simply "repaired" human bodies, we would still be in the flesh, and subject to the same sinful urges we have now, even in the absence of Satan.

470.010.060      Torrey: p487, T:I, P:6

**POINT 60: At the resurrection we shall be given in place of "the earthly house of our tabernacle," i.e., our present physical frame, "a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens", i.e., the resurrection body. Mortality shall be swallowed up by life.**

**2 Corinthians 5:1-2, 4** [1] Now we know that if the earthly tent we live in is destroyed, we have a building from God, an eternal house in heaven, not built by human hands. [2] Meanwhile we groan, longing to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, [3] because when we are clothed, we will not be found naked. [4] For while we are in this tent, we groan and are burdened, because we do not wish to be unclothed but to be clothed with our heavenly dwelling, so that what is mortal may be swallowed up by life.

470.010.070      Torrey: p487, T:I, P:7

**POINT 70: At His coming our Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, "shall fashion anew the body of our humiliation, that it may be conformed to the body of His glory."**

**Philippians 3:20-21** [20] But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from

there, the Lord Jesus Christ, [21] who, by the power that enables him to bring everything under his control, will transform our lowly bodies so that they will be like his glorious body.

#### THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE RESURRECTION BODY.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(1)

**POINT 70a: It will not be the same body that is laid in the grave.**

**1 Corinthians 15:35-38** [35] But someone may ask, "How are the dead raised? With what kind of body will they come?" [36] How foolish! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies. [37] When you sow, you do not plant the body that will be, but just a seed, perhaps of wheat or of something else. [38] But God gives it a body as he has determined, and to each kind of seed he gives its own body.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(2)

**POINT 70b: It will not be flesh and blood.**

**1 Corinthians 15:50-51** [50] I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. [51] Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(3)

**POINT 70c: It will not be pure spirit, but have flesh and bones.**

**Luke 24:39** Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch me and see; a ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(4)

**POINT 70d: It will be incorruptible -- not subject to decay, imperishable.**

**1 Corinthians 15:42** So will it be with the resurrection of the dead. The body that is sown is perishable, it is raised imperishable;

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(5)

**POINT 70e: It will be glorious.**

**1 Corinthians 15:43(a)** [43] it is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory;

Compare **Revelation 1:13-17** [13] and among the lamp-stands was someone "like a son of man," dressed in a robe reaching down to his feet and with a golden sash around his chest. [14] His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were like blazing fire. [15] His feet were like bronze glowing in a furnace, and his voice was like the sound of rushing waters. [16] In his right hand he held seven stars, and out of his mouth came a sharp double-edged sword. His face was like the sun shining in all its brilliance. [17] When I saw him, I fell at his feet as though dead. Then he placed his right hand on me and said: "Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(6)

**POINT 70f: It will be powerful.**

**1 Corinthians 15:43(b)** it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power;

The days of weariness and weakness will be forever at an end. The body will be able to accomplish



all the Spirit purposes.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(7)

**POINT 70g: It will be heavenly.**

**1 Corinthians 15:47-49** [47] The first man was of the dust of the earth, the second man from heaven. [48] As was the earthly man, so are those who are of the earth; and as is the man from heaven, so also are those who are of heaven. [49] And just as we have borne the likeness of the earthly man, so shall we bear the likeness of the man from heaven.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(8)

**POINT 70h: It will be luminous, shining, dazzling, bright like the sun.**

**Matthew 13:43** Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears, let him hear.

**Daniel 12:3** Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever.

Compare **Matthew 17:2** There he was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light.

**Luke 9:29** As he was praying, the appearance of his face changed, and his clothes became as bright as a flash of lightning.

NOTE - It has been conjectured that the bodies of Adam and Eve were so before they sinned, and that this glory served as a covering which departed when they sinned. So "they knew that they were naked."

**Genesis 3:7** Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(9)

**POINT 70i: Resurrection bodies will be "like the angels."**

**Matthew 22:30** At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven.

**Luke 20:35-36** [35] But those who are considered worthy of taking part in that age and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage, [36] and they can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are God's children, since they are children of the resurrection.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(9)(a)

**POINT 70j: After the resurrection people will not marry.**

**Matthew 22:30(a)** At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage;

**Luke 20:35** But those who are considered worthy of taking part in that age and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage,

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(9)(b)

**POINT 70k: Resurrection bodies will not die.**

**Luke 20:35-36** [35] But those who are considered worthy of taking part in that age and in the resurrection from the dead will neither marry nor be given in marriage, [36] and they can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are God's children, since they are children of the resurrection.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(10)

**POINT 70l: Resurrection bodies differ from one another.**

**1 Corinthians 15:41- 42(a)** [41] The sun has one kind of splendor, the moon another and the stars another; and star differs from star in splendor. [42] So will it be with the resurrection of the dead.

470.010.070 Torrey: p488, T:I, P:7(11)

**POINT 70k: The Resurrection Body will be the consummation of our adoption as sons.**

**Romans 8:23** Not only so, but we ourselves, who have the firstfruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for our adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies.

The Resurrection Body will be the consummation of the adoption, our placing as sons. In the Resurrection Body it will be outwardly manifest that we are sons of God. Before His incarnation Christ was "in the form of God", i.e., in the visible appearance of God.

**Philippians 2:6** Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped,

So shall we be in the resurrection.

**Colossians 3:4** When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

**1 John 3:2** Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

470.010.080 Torrey: p489, T:I, P:8

**POINT 80: At the coming of Christ and the resurrection of those who sleep in Jesus, believers who have remained alive until that time, and those who are raised, shall be caught up together to meet the Lord in the air.**

**1 Thessalonians 4:17(a)** After that, we who are still alive and are left will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air.

470.010.090 Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9

**POINT 90: After the coming of Christ and our being caught up to meet Him, we shall be with the Lord forever; there shall be no more separation from Him.**

**John 14:3** And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am.

**1 Thessalonians 4:17(b)** And so we will be with the Lord forever.

**John 12:26** Whoever serves me must follow me; and where I am, my servant also will be. My

Father will honor the one who serves me.

470.010.092 Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(1)#1

**POINT 92: Where believers will be after resurrection.**

470.010.092a Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(1)#1

**POINT 92a: We will be in a prepared place.**

**John 14:2** In my Father's house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you.

We shall be in a prepared place. A place that Jesus himself has gone for the express purpose of preparing for us. We shall be a prepared people in a prepared place. This place that Jesus is preparing He speaks of as "abodes" or "abiding places" (translated "mansions").

470.010.092b Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(2)#1

**POINT 92b: We will be in a heavenly country.**

**Hebrews 11:10, 16** [10] For he was looking forward to the city with foundations, whose architect and builder is God. [16] Instead, they were longing for a better country -- a heavenly one. Therefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for he has prepared a city for them.

We shall be in a city which has foundations whose builder and make is God, a better country than this, a heavenly country, a city prepared by God for us.

470.010.094 Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(1)#2

**POINT 94: Characteristics of the resurrection city.**

470.010.094a Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(1)#2

**POINT 94a: The city will be an abiding city.**

**Hebrews 13:14** For here we do not have an enduring city, but we are looking for the city that is to come.

470.010.094b Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(2)#2

**POINT 94b: We will not worship in a building, but right before God.**

**Revelation 21:22** I did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple.

The Lord God, the Almighty, and the Lamb are the temple thereof. We will not go to some building to worship, but right to themselves.

470.010.094c Torrey: p490, T:I, P:9(3)#2

**POINT 94c: The city will not need a sun.**

**Revelation 21:23** The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.

The city has no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine upon it: for the glory of God lightens it, and the Lamb himself is the lamp thereof. Paul got a hint of the dazzling brilliance of that light on the Damascus Road. Our resurrection eyes will be able to endure and enjoy the glory that blinded him.

There will be no dark days.

470.010.094d Torrey: p491, T:I, P:9(4)#2

**POINT 94d: The gates will never be shut and there will be no night.**

**Revelation 21:25** On no day will its gates ever be shut, for there will be no night there.

The gates of the city will never be shut and there will no night. Perfect security and no darkness.

470.010.094e Torrey: p491, T:I, P:9(5)#2

**POINT 94e: There will be nothing unclean, false.**

**Revelation 21:27** Nothing impure will ever enter it, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful, but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life.

There will be there nothing unclean, nothing a bominable, nothing false, untrue, nor unreal. No saloons, no filth, no shams.

470.010.094f Torrey: p491, T:I, P:9(6)#2

**POINT 94f: There will be a river of water of life and the tree of life and of the healing of nations.**

**Revelation 22:1-2** [1] Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb [2] down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.

There shall be a river of water of life, bright as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb, in the midst of the street thereof, and on both sides of the river shall be the tree of life, bearing twelve fruits, yielding its fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree for the healing of the nations.

470.010.100 Torrey: p491, T:I, P:10

**POINT 100: When the Lord shall be revealed from heaven we shall be given rest.**

**2 Thessalonians 1:7** and give relief to you who are troubled, and to us as well. This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels.

**Hebrews 4:9** There remains, then, a Sabbath-rest for the people of God;

Now we have conflict and tribulation. Then we shall have rest and glory.

470.010.110 Torrey: p491, T:I, P:11

**POINT 110: We shall behold the glory of our Lord, the glory which the Father has given Him.**

**John 17:24** Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory you have given me because you loved me before the creation of the world.

The word translated "see" is a strong word. It means to gaze at with interest and intensity. We shall put our whole being into rapturous and adoring contemplation of the revealed glory of Him who on earth suffered shame for us.

470.010.120 Torrey: p492, T:I, P:12

**POINT 120: We shall be like Him.**

**1 John 3:2** Dear friends, now we are children of God, and what we will be has not yet been made known. But we know that when he appears, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.

QUESTION: Does the Him here refer to Christ or the Father?

ANSWER: It does not matter; for if we are like the one, we shall also be like the other:

**Hebrews 1:3** The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven.

**John 14:9** Jesus answered: "Don't you know me, Philip, even after I have been among you such a long time? Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father. How can you say, 'Show us the Father'?"

**Philippians 2:6** Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped,

470.010.130 Torrey: p492, T:I, P:13

**POINT 130: We shall be manifested in glory with Him.**

**Colossians 3:4** When Christ, who is your life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

We shall not only behold His glory, but reflect it in ourselves. Our life is now a hidden one, hid with Christ in God, but when He is manifested in glory we shall be too.

**Colossians 3:3** For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God.

(1) **Romans 8:18** I consider that our present sufferings are not worth comparing with the glory that will be revealed in us.

The sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us.

(2) **2 Corinthians 4:17** For our light and momentary troubles are achieving for us an eternal glory that far outweighs them all.

This eternal weight of glory is being worked out for us more and more exceedingly by our present momentary light affliction.

**John 17:22** I have given them the glory that you gave me, that they may be one as we are one:

(3) **2 Thessalonians 2:14** He called you to this through our gospel, that you might share in the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The glory that God has given to Jesus shall be ours.

**1 Thessalonians 2:12** encouraging, comforting and urging you to live lives worthy of God, who

calls you into his kingdom and glory.

We shall be sharers in God's own glory and kingdom. IN a word, we shall be heirs of God and joint heirs with Jesus Christ, glorified together with Him.

**Romans 8:17** Now if we are children, then we are heirs -- heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory.

470.010.140 Torrey: p493, T:I, P:14

**POINT 140: At the coming of Christ and His reckoning with His servants, His faithful servants will be commended by Him and enter into the joy of their Lord.**

**Matthew 25:20-23** [20] The man who had received the five talents brought the other five. 'Master,' he said, 'you entrusted me with five talents. See, I have gained five more.' [21] "His master replied, 'Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master's happiness!' [22] "The man with the two talents also came. 'Master,' he said, 'you entrusted me with two talents; see, I have gained two more.' [23] "His master replied, 'Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master's happiness!'

470.010.150 Torrey: p493, T:I, P:15#1

**POINT 150: Rewards will vary in proportion to fidelity in service.**

**Luke 19:12-13, 15-19** [12] He said: "A man of noble birth went to a distant country to have himself appointed king and then to return. [13] So he called ten of his servants and gave them ten minas. 'Put this money to work,' he said, 'until I come back.' [15] "He was made king, however, and returned home. Then he sent for the servants to whom he had given the money, in order to find out what they had gained with it. [16] "The first one came and said, 'Sir, your mina has earned ten more.' [17] " 'Well done, my good servant!' his master replied. 'Because you have been trustworthy in a very small matter, take charge of ten cities.' [18] "The second came and said, 'Sir, your mina has earned five more.' [19] "His master answered, 'You take charge of five cities.'

We are saved by faith but rewarded according to our own works. Compare:

**Matthew 6:20** But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy, and where thieves do not break in and steal.

**1 Corinthians 3:11-15** [11] For no one can lay any foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ. [12] If any man builds on this foundation using gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay or straw, [13] his work will be shown for what it is, because the Day will bring it to light. It will be revealed with fire, and the fire will test the quality of each man's work. [14] If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. [15] If it is burned up, he will suffer loss; he himself will be saved, but only as one escaping through the flames.

470.010.150 Torrey: p494, T:I, P:15#2

**POINT 155: Those who come out of the great tribulation, having washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb, shall stand before the throne and before the Lamb, arrayed in white robes, and palms in their hands. (Purity, victory and festal joy.) They shall serve God day and night in His temple. He who sits on the throne shall spread His tabernacle over them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun strike upon them, nor any heat, for the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall be their shepherd, and shall**

**guide them to fountains of waters of life, and God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.**

**Revelation 7:13 9-10, 13- 17** [9] After this I looked and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. [10] And they cried out in a loud voice: "Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb." [13] Then one of the elders asked me, "These in white robes -- who are they, and where did they come from?" [14] I answered, "Sir, you know." And he said, "These are they who have come out of the great tribulation; they have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. [15] Therefore, "they are before the throne of God and serve him day and night in his temple; and he who sits on the throne will spread his tent over them. [16] Never again will they hunger; never again will they thirst. The sun will not beat upon them, nor any scorching heat. [17] For the Lamb at the center of the throne will be their shepherd; he will lead them to springs of living water. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes."

470.010.160 Torrey: p494, T:I, P:16

**POINT 160: Those who endure temptation shall receive the crown of life which the Lord has promised to those who love Him.**

**James 1:12** Blessed is the man who perseveres under trial, because when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of life that God has promised to those who love him.

Perseverance is the proof of true love to Christ, that we stand true to him under trial, and this wins the crown of life.

470.010.170 Torrey: p495, T:I, P:17

**POINT 170: "At that day" the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give the crown of righteousness to all those who have loved His appearing.**

**2 Timothy 4:8** Now there is in store for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day -- and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.

470.010.180 Torrey: p495, T:I, P:18

**POINT 180: When the chief Shepherd is manifested, He shall give the crown of glory that does not fade away to the undershepherds who have tended the flock of God, exercising the oversight, not of constraint, but willingly, according to God; not for money, but with eager readiness; not lording it over the charge allotted to them, but making themselves examples to the flock.**

**1 Peter 5:1-4** [1] To the elders among you, I appeal as a fellow elder, a witness of Christ's sufferings and one who also will share in the glory to be revealed: [2] Be shepherds of God's flock that is under your care, serving as overseers -- not because you must, but because you are willing, as God wants you to be; not greedy for money, but eager to serve; [3] not lording it over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock. [4] And when the Chief Shepherd appears, you will receive the crown of glory that will never fade away.

Note the three crowns -- "The Crown of Life", "the Crown of Righteousness", and "the Crown of Glory" -- and who is to receive each.

470.010.190 Torrey: p495, T:I, P:19

**POINT 190: God has promised, Christ has appointed, and it is the Father's good pleasure to**



**give a kingdom to those who love God and continue with Christ in His temptations.**

**James 2:5** Listen, my dear brothers: Has not God chosen those who are poor in the eyes of the world to be rich in faith and to inherit the kingdom he promised those who love him?

**Luke 22:28-29** [28] You are those who have stood by me in my trials. [29] And I confer on you a kingdom, just as my Father conferred one on me,

**Luke 12:32** Do not be afraid, little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give you the kingdom.

470.010.192 Torrey: p495, T:I, P:19(1)

**POINT 192: In the kingdom we shall reign with Christ as priests of God and of Christ.**

**Revelation 20:6** Blessed and holy are those who have part in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with him for a thousand years.

470.010.194 Torrey: p496, T:I, P:19(2)

**POINT 194 The kingdom was prepared for us from the foundation of the world.**

**Matthew 25:34** Then the King will say to those on his right, "Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world."

470.010.196 Torrey: p496, T:I, P:19(3)

**POINT 196 The kingdom cannot be shaken.**

**Hebrews 12:28** Therefore, since we are receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful, and so worship God acceptably with reverence and awe,

470.010.200 Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20

**POINT 200: Promises to him who overcomes (or carries off the victory).**

470.010.200a Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(1)

**POINT 200a: To him who overcomes Christ will give to eat of the tree of life.**

**Revelation 2:7** He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give the right to eat from the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God.

470.010.200b Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(2)

**POINT 200b: He who overcomes will not be hurt by the second death.**

**Revelation 2:11** He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt at all by the second death.

470.010.200c Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(3)

**POINT 200c: To him who overcomes Christ will give a new name.**

**Revelation 2:17** He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give some of the hidden manna. I will also give him a white stone with a new name written on it, known only to him who receives it.

470.010.200d Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(4)

**POINT 200d: Christ will give believers authority over nations.**

**Revelation 2:26-27** [26] To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations -- [27] "He will rule them with an iron scepter; he will dash them to pieces like pottery" -- just as I have received authority from my Father.

470.010.200e Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(5)

**POINT 200e: He who overcomes shall be arrayed in white garments and walk with Christ.**

**Revelation 3:4-5** [4] Yet you have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes. They will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. [5] He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels.

470.010.200f Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(6)

**POINT 200f: Those who overcome will be pillars in the temple of God.**

**Revelation 3:12** Him who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. Never again will he leave it. I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which is coming down out of heaven from my God; and I will also write on him my new name.

470.010.200g Torrey: p496, T:I, P:20(7)

**POINT 200g: Those who overcome will sit with Christ on His throne.**

**Revelation 3:21** To him who overcomes, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne.

470.010.210 Torrey: p497, T:I, P:21

**POINT 210: God shall wipe away every tear from the eyes of His people. Death shall be no more; neither shall there be mourning, nor crying, nor pain any more.**

**Revelation 21:4** He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away."

470.010.220 Torrey: p497, T:I, P:22

**POINT 220: We shall see no longer in a mirror, in a riddle, but face to face. We shall know no longer in part, but we shall know God and all things in that perfect way in which He already knows us.**

**1 Corinthians 13:12** Now we see but a poor reflection as in a mirror; then we shall see face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known.

470.010.230 Torrey: p498, T:I, P:23

**POINT 230: In the day of our Lord Jesus Christ we shall not be subject to reproach. He will so perfect us that there will be absolutely nothing in us that even He can find fault with or be displeased with.**

**1 Corinthians 1:8** He will keep you strong to the end, so that you will be blameless on the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Jude 1:24** To him who is able to keep you from falling and to present you before his glorious presence without fault and with great joy --

470.010.240      Torrey: p498, T:I, P:24

**POINT 240: Christ will present the Church to Himself, a glorious Church, not having spot nor wrinkle, nor any such thing; but holy and without blemish.**

**Ephesians 5:27** and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.

470.010.250      Torrey: p498, T:I, P:25

**POINT 250: We who are guarded by God's power, through faith, to a salvation ready to be revealed in the last time, shall receive an inheritance, incorruptible, and undefiled, and that does not fade away, reserved in heaven for us.**

**1 Peter 1:4-5** [4] and into an inheritance that can never perish, spoil or fade -- kept in heaven for you, [5] who through faith are shielded by God's power until the coming of the salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last time.

---